

1969 Basics

R. B. Thieme Jr.

Eph. 4:17 Scar Tissue of the Soul Special (Intro to Basic Doctrine) 1/21/69

This is a transition from exegesis to basics

One of the greatest strategies of the Christian life is for a person to believe in Jesus Christ and then go on negative toward doctrine. The great tragedy of the Christian life is ignorance of Bible doctrine; the greatest virtue is knowledge of Bible doctrine.

Many of you will fall by the wayside. Other things are more important to you. The thorns choke out the concept of grace. If you stick it out, every Tuesday night, night by night, you will profit by it.

This is the 15th basic class or so. It begins with a lot of enthusiasm and bodies. But you aren't going to get with it.

We'll begin with scar tissue of the soul. Most of those here began by faith in Jesus Christ. He gave us 34 things at the moment of salvation. You are 34 + misery. A billion years from now you will have the same 34 things. You can be on negative signals from then on.

The evangelist does not tell you to come forward and be miserable. You may get one or two, but those are weirdos.

The Greek is complex, but the message is simple. In case he loses us along the way, If you go on negative volition toward doctrine, you can be the most miserable person in the world. Whether you are miserable or happy depends upon a facet of your soul.

He began with God before, but now he begins with the soul. What we really are is inside the skull, and the skull is designed to be extremely strong. The real you is inside, the soul. The soul has self consciousness, mentality, volition (the big issue of the Christian life; you are constantly making decisions); emotion (the appreciatory), conscience (norms and standards); and the old sin nature (the distorter of life and the basis of spiritual death).

The woman has a set of responders. The woman is the glory of the man, and the man is the glory of God. There should be a touching of the souls before the touching of the bodies.

Eph. 4:17: **This I say, therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you no longer walk as the rest of the Gentiles walk, in the emptiness of their mind,...**

Paul uses a word which causes the reader to sit up. Τοῦτο λέγω οὖν and then there is the long verb μαρτυρομαι = *which means to make a solemn statement (without any injection of humor)*. It excludes anything which is superficial, anything which is light, and anything which is humorous.

No church would hire a pastor like Paul today. He was unattractive and he had a high, squeaky voice. He would not be cast in Hollywood as any part in the clergy. Paul tells them to get their eyes on the message.

He then says, do not imitate the unbeliever. **Do not walk as the Gentiles walk.** These Gentiles are unbelievers who are in a frantic search for happiness. The more they search, the more they seek, they cannot get it. They see a woman, and they reach for her, and happiness is gone; they see a bag of money and reach for it, and happiness is gone. How many times have you said, "If I just had this or that, I would be happy." And as soon as you got it, you were just as miserable. The Gentiles are making a frantic search for happiness and the believer acts just like the unbeliever. The believer searching for happiness and he is not happy.

There is God, a member of the opposite sex, friends, and the details of life. These are the things which some chase after. Did you ever stop chasing after happiness and just sit down and relax and happiness will come to you.

Μετιότης = *emptiness, the vacuum created in the soul by negative volition toward doctrine*. False doctrine, religion, legalism, the emphasis upon the details of life, mental attitude sins, etc. are sucked into the soul. This causes the believer to walk like a Gentile frantically searching out happiness.

A vacuum is created in the mentality of the soul. Negative volition in the νοῦς sucks in false doctrine and kooky thinking. As a believer, if you go on negative volition toward doctrine, you will be miserable; and your soul will be a vacuum which will suck in every false doctrine. Scar tissue of the soul will develop and it will destroy the perspective of phase 2.

The thinking part of the mind is going to be definitely hurt by the vacuum. Having the understanding darkened. Διανοια = *thinking through, understanding*. This refers to the conscious part of the mind where you do your actual thinking. Periphrastic σκοτιζω = *blackout*. Perfect tense means this is permanent. Passive voice, this is received by going on negative toward doctrine. The believer who rejects Bible doctrine has a permanent blackout in phase 2 which causes him to be disoriented to the grace of God.

Another word for thinking: καρδια = *heart, thinking*. 1Chron. 29:18 has **the thoughts of his heart**. Kardia was used here in the LXX (the Septuagint). This is a blackout of doctrine which will result in scar tissue of the soul which will lead to unhappiness of the soul. The concept of love under these categories. Category 1 love toward God; category 2 love toward the opposite sex; category 3 love is friends.

He turns into a phoney; he runs around and says *God willing* and all this phoney stuff that you hear. The concept is, if you do not know Bible doctrine, then you cannot respond to the perfect love of God. Scar tissue of the soul comes from ignorance of doctrine. It comes from negative volition to doctrine.

When you have a blackout of doctrine, the thinking part of the soul is blacked out, pseudo love toward friends, toward God toward the member of the opposite sex. All you need to be unhappy as a believer is having a blacked out mind. All you need is the right combination.

In v. 17: a person on negative volition toward doctrine; he is suffering a resultant blackout of the soul, called *ματιστης*. There is the vanity of the mind (*vous*). You have a mind where you do your thinking. The frontal part of the lobe is *δισνοια*. There is something in the mind: falso doctrine, emphasis on the details of life, religion; it goes through *cosmos diabolicus* and picks up all the false concepts like a vacuum. The principle is that you become a disoriented believer. This is described by being alienated, described by *απατριολα* = *to be alienated from an ultimate source; to be estranged*. If you have accepted the plan of God, you are not estranged. **These are written that you might believe that Jesus is the Son of God.** After this, you are in the *life of God*. Billions of years ago, God the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit all had +H (perfect happiness). There is a tremendous stability here. He had to develop a plan where man could enjoy happiness. He provided the salvation at phase 1. God wants man to have happiness in time, in phase 2; even as man would in phase 3, which is eternity. Man has happiness through knowledge of Bible doctrine. When there is no happiness, there is great misery. This means estrangement from the plan of God, which is the word *alienated*.

How it is possible to have a blackout of the soul? To be a child of God and yet be alienated from Him? As a result, you are ignorant of doctrine.

Δια + the accusative = *because of ignorance*. A total lack of understanding. *Αγνοια* = *no knowledge, ignorance*. If the believer is on negative volition, then he has ignorance of doctrine in the soul. Now there is a vanity of the soul, a vacuum of the soul, and it sucks in any false doctrine. This is why believers get caught up in the tongues movement or some other sort of emotionalism; or emphasis on the details of life. This means alienation from more grace. In other words, if you are ignorant of Bible doctrine, you are disoriented to the plan of God. You are not capable of love the right person designed for you; you will be miserable with the details of life. Mental attitude sins produce self-induced misery. Health, sex, social life, status symbols, which things are not wrong in themselves. However, all these things will make you miserable, if you are negative toward doctrine.

Our of ignorance comes unhappiness or misery. You have to decide tonight whether you are going to stay with it. The message is simple. Knowledge of doctrine will produce great blessing. You can be a believer for the next 50 years and be miserable for all that time, simply because you are estranged from the plan of God, phase 2.

Eph. 4:17–19: This I say, therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you no longer walk as the rest of the Gentiles walk, in the vacuum of their mind, having their understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, because of the ignorance that is in them, because of the callousness [scar tissue] of their heart; who, being past feeling, have given themselves over to licentiousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. ...

Because of the scar tissue of the heart; because of the callousness of the heart.

1Chron. 29:19: O Jehovah the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, our fathers, keep this forever in the intent of the **thoughts of the heart [the mentality of the soul] of Your people**, and fix their heart toward You....

The Greeks used the heart to refer to the entire thinking. It is the source of our conscious life, which is the mentality of the soul.

Διανοια = *understanding, the thinking part of the mind*. This is blacked out because of ignorance of doctrine. **Having become alienated or estranged to the life of God in them because of the scar tissue of their heart.** The heart is the mentality of the soul. Here is the existence of the scar tissue of the soul.

How the Heart is Used

1. Heart is used for the old sin nature. Mat. 12
2. mentality of the soul.
3. Use for entire soul.

There is a complete blackout of doctrine, which results in disorientation; alienated from the life of God. Because of these things, there exists in the soul, scar tissue of the soul.

Summary of Scar Tissue of the Soul

1. Ignorance of doctrine alienates from the life of God, phase 2.
2. Such alienation creates friction in the soul. This friction in the soul has a two-fold trend; the thought pattern: mental attitude sins: guilt complex, fear, worry, anxiety, jealousy.
3. These frictions of the soul create scar tissue in the soul. Πληροσις.
4. Scar tissue of the soul not only alienates from the life of God, but destroys true love in all of its categories. When you destroy the capacity for true love, then you destroy the capacity for happiness. God wants you to be happy, although some would not believe this.
5. Scar tissue of the soul removes any possibility of happiness.
6. Scar tissue can be removed by reversing the process. It is put on the soul by ignorance and it is removed by knowledge of doctrine. We are over the hump at v. 19.

Eph 4:19: ...who, being past feeling, have given themselves over to licentiousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

The negative volition toward doctrine sucks in false doctrine, which blacks out the soul, wiping out happiness. Notice that ἀγαπή love (mental attitude love) is impossible with scar tissue of the soul. We are still saved, still members of the family of God. This leads to an over. Απαλγεω = *to be hardened, to be indifferent to doctrine*. As a believer, you become searching for happiness. You see a doll, a bar, a tv program; there is happiness; you see a house; there is happiness. You become more and more scarred and happiness becomes more elusive.

Scar tissue of the soul causes you to betray yourself. You could not be more stupid than to betray yourself. You betray yourselves over the lasciviousness, promiscuity. This word takes up the slack for fornication and adultery. In the old days, adultery was for adults. One academic word, *promiscuity*. Ultimately, everyone who is lonely thinks that their happiness lies with going to bed with a member of the opposite sex, except for the few weirdos who go in for homosexuality. After a few drinks, a woman looks like Madonna and she had H written on her head for elusive happiness.

As a pastor, Bob is only concerned with getting a point over to us. “And if I bump into somewhere, then just pretend you don’t know me.” Scar tissue of the soul is developed by lasciviousness, which is the Greek word αλσεγηα, which is the lust to do these things, but without following it through.

Prov. 6:32: **He who commits adultery with a woman lacks understanding [doctrine]; he who does so destroys his own soul.** Such a man does not realize that God has provided the right woman, which means a good sex life, as well as great rapport and conversation. You can either faith rest it and wait, or be promiscuous and build up scar tissue. The one who does this betrays himself to lasciviousness.

How do you destroy your soul? Soul of a girl, she is a believer but with no Bible doctrine, and she has some scar tissue on the soul through ignorance and she is about to get some more; and she had volition, and already plans to go to bed with this guy. At least she has norms and standards in this particular field, and she is about to cut into her conscience. She has apertures for the right man where these would line up; he would make her a woman and turn her into the glory of the man. When these apertures are open, she has great happiness. A man’s capacity for happiness is different from the woman. The woman can have great capacity for happiness. If she has scar tissue over these apertures, then she cannot have a fulfilled life even with her right man. Load up these apertures with scar tissue and you have had it when it comes to happiness.

Don’t look at these next two verses till we get there. If you look down now, I know you are in trouble. There are two ways for scar tissue to be formed on the apertures of the soul. They are formed on the inside through the friction and through promiscuity on the outside.

The soul is neglected when there is a physical relationship and the apertures are covered with scar tissue. The body of the believer is the temple of the Holy Spirit. When there is no involvement of the soul, the soul puts up scar tissue and seals itself off from the body. God knows what He is saying when He warns us about this.

The next word is ἐργασία = *to make a business of something*. When you get into promiscuity, you have made a profession of uncleanness. The soul is not clean and now is becoming covered with scar tissue. Increased scar tissue on the soul. Frantic search for happiness, which comes up next: with greediness, which is πληρονιζία = *an insatiable, unsatisfied desire or lust*. Happiness is just around the corner and it isn't there. You go around the corner, and it isn't there. Instead of faith rest, which is God's provision, she is constantly walking around the next corner looking for happiness.

Eph. 4:19: **...who having developed scar tissue, having betrayed themselves to promiscuity, making a business of uncleanness in the sphere of insatiable lust.**

Category 2 love is used illustratively here to explain why God does not allow promiscuity. It is important to understand this for our own happiness.

The whole problem begins with being negative toward doctrine. Then you set up a vacuum in the soul, which sucks in false doctrine, and scar tissue over your soul; and you keep building up scar tissue through promiscuity, and then you chase after more happiness, which builds up more scar tissue.

Bob wants to get to the solution:

Eph 4:20 **But you have not so learned Christ,**

μανθάνω = *to learn doctrine*. Christ is no longer here, but He has left His thinking behind and we learn this through being negative toward doctrine.

1st class condition, which means they have heard Him.

Eph 4:21 **...if indeed you have heard Him and have been taught by Him, as the truth is in Jesus:**

The whole purpose of church is to come together and have privacy. This is not the NAV system where someone checks out your daily acts. We are to make decisions under the privacy of the priesthood.

You have heard Him and you have been taught [in an assembly of people] by Him. Bob has to know his subject, but he does not need to know the members of his congregation. Those in his congregation have privacy. No good when someone has to bully you into a course of action, good or bad. **as the truth is in the Jesus.** Bob is to provide us with the ability to remove scar tissue.

Tuesdays, Bob is going to teach us how to remove all of this scar tissue. On Bible doctrine can remove us from a very bad situation.

2Tim. 1:12 Scar Tissue of the Soul Special (Intro to Basic Doctrine) 1/28/69

Last week, we began the introduction to the basic series; we look at the solution to it tonight.

You're here tonite, will you be here next time, some of you yes and some of you know. Are you Phygellus or Onisiphorus.

Negative introduction last week; the positive introduction this week.

He left out v. 11, which is a teacher, and that is Bob's responsibility to us; to communicate Bible doctrine; basic Bible doctrine. If you persist, week after week, and these things will be organized categorically for us. You can be spiritually self-sustaining provided that you are a believer in Jesus Christ.

2Tim. 1:12–17: For this reason I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep safe what I have committed to Him until that Day.

2Ti 1:13 Hold fast the form of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus.

2Ti 1:14 That good thing which was committed to you, guard it by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.

2Ti 1:15 This you know, that all those in Asia have turned away from me, among whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

2Ti 1:16 The Lord grant mercy to the household of Onesiphorus, for he often refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain;

2Ti 1:17 but when he arrived in Rome, he sought me out very diligently and found me.

A teacher is not someone who superimposes on you his own norms and standards, a teacher is not someone to gets into your private business; and a teacher does not bully you into a course of action.

You are a believer priest and you have freedom to live your life as unto the Lord. Neither I or a church or any group of believers have the right to bully you into some course of action. No group of believers can tell you what to wear, or what you do.

Anyone who criticizes you for anything is out of line. You are welcome to wear slacks, shorts or, if you have the nerve, a bikini. Some of you don't like that. This building is not sacred and many things have been worn in here.

You can't tell someone you don't like what they wear and their hair is too long or too short; there are a lot of things I don't like. You can come in with a ton of makeup and sometimes

that is very helpful. People who come in have just as much right to be here as you have, and you need to know that it is none of your business.

There is just one thing that you have in common—Bob is the teacher. Come prepared to take notes and to assimilate doctrine. There is one authority; and “I don’t want you to have any idea of anything else. And if I speak dogmatically and you don’t like it, it is too bad. If you stick around, then I am going to teach you.”

Most of you have been exposed to manners and some of you probably having excellent manners. When you are in the auditorium, then you should have enough poise, training and decorum to keep your mouth shut, unless you have a legitimate question.

There are two categories of believers: the believers who never make it, but are loved by God: P and H (Phygellus and Hermogenes). They are loved by God but will never advance. Some of you are born again but you just don’t have enough to stay with it. There might be a good party on Tuesday night; there might be a good fight on Tuesday night. Whatever it is, Tuesday night will be attacked.

On the other side of the fence, there are those who stick it out. You can ask yourself these questions academically and it is no one else’s business but yours.

“I don’t give whether you come or not. You may think you are doing me a great favor by coming or not. This puts you on a basis with the Lord. I’ll stand here and talk to myself if necessary. I know 3 people I can get in here no matter what. Don’t every take a patronizing attitude with me either. What I am think might surprise you.”

Those with a religious background have trouble sticking it out. If you come from a church with a program, and you get points for this or that, you won’t stick it out unless you shed your religion.

I suppose you have all been swimming with a bathing suit. The greatest swimming in the world is diving into the water off Catalina Island without anything on. You are going to have to learn how to swim without the phoney self righteousness of religion. You are a priest and it is between you and the Lord. You may have a good excuse to cut out, but you don’t ever have to make an excuse to me ever.

There are believers who stuck it out and learned and those who did not.

2Tim. 1:12a: **Because of which cause**, which is because Paul is a teacher. “All missionaries and are evangelists and all pastors are human. Being a human being like yourself, I have a sin nature like you, and you may think that you have discovered it, but you don’t really know. I’m a pastor-teacher and I did not earn it and I did not deserve it.” **I suffer these things** [which refers to his second imprisonment]. **...but I am not ashamed...** The real check for psueo love is are you ashamed? You happen to be with a crowd and it is not the in-think to express a relationship with Christ, are you ashamed? When you go to the barracks, are you ashamed? **Επεισκευομαι** is someone who is a phoney. What Bible doctrine will do

is knock the phoniness right out of you. One of the benefits of this class is an relaxed mental attitude. Christianity is filled with psuedos. Other categories of love: a member of the opposite sex, family, parents, even the details of life. The whole system of cosmos diabolicus is to make you a phoney. You're a social climber, you're phoney. You're nice to people you can't stand; you're a phoney.

Paul is not ashamed because he has learned Bible doctrine. He has two sets of apertures which have been opened by knowledge of doctrine and he can respond to God and he is not ashamed; Paul is saying that he is not a phoney.

One of the worst things brought into Christianity is sincerity; the sincere people Thieme has known are phoney. Sincerity at best has standards which come from emotion. Standards from God will be called doctrine. A principle from God, Bible doctrine.

2Tim. 1:12b: **For I know** which is οἶδα = *knowledge in the frontal lobe*. **whom I have believed** which is the perfect tense for πιστευω. There is an object and a subject and it is in the perfect tense. God has a plan for every member of the human race and that begins in eternity past. Paul knows Who he believed in, Jesus Christ, which occurred 25 years ago. The result is he remains a believer forever. Paul said *I know* and this is the basis for the capacity to love God. You must learn Bible doctrine in order to love God. **and I have received confidence** which is the perfect passive indicative of πιστευω = *to have faith in; to have confidence in*. The objective of this course is confidence as a believer. You may have no confidence in anything at all, and maybe it is because you are smart and maybe because you are dumb. The believer here receives confidence.

Paul has knowledge of the One in Whom he has believed and, because of this, he has confidence. This is the whole principle. I have confidence in a person; I have confidence in God; I have confidence in His character; and I have confidence that He is able.

2Tim. 1:12c: **and I know that He keeps on having inherent power [who continues to be able to]...** Paul knows that God is eternal life, immutability and veracity, omnipotent, righteousness and justice. He knows that God cannot change and welsh on an obligation. He knows that God has the ability to do what He says. We will learn God's character in this course. Once you get to know God as a believer, your capacity to love God will improve. You have a lot of bad impressions of God, no impressions of God. God is not how you think He is at all. Most of you cheapen God. You think that with 10% of your earnings dumped in an offering plate will impress Him. God is not a genie and God is not cheap. I told you that you will have to get rid of your religion. You think there is something you can do and something you can say, to impress Him, you have cheapened God. But you cannot find all of this out in one night. This passage will get us ready and it will also be the last time that we see some of you.

Φυλασσω = *to guard, to watch over*. God guards us; He has the power and omnipotence to guard. But why did he let me marry this bum or do this or that. God is a gentleman; and He guards us when we make some of the most jackasss decisions that anyone can make. We have all made some lousy decisions. He guards us when we go absolutely contrary

to His plan for our lives. When you believed in Jesus Christ, you had no idea how great His character is. He has the power to guard that which we have committed to Him.

Παραθηκη = a *deposit*. ...to preserve my deposit against that day. You will have those 34 things today and forever. When you believed in Jesus Christ, you have deposited your soul with Him; you may be a good Christian or a lousy Christian, but you may be carnal or spiritual; but whatever, in one second of time, you cannot lose that deposit. I am sure there are deposit slips that He would like to lose. However, He cannot throw any of them away.

Doctrine of Deposits

Between Paul and his audience of 3, we have this doctrine

1. The believer deposits his soul with the Lord at the moment of salvation. 2Tim. 1:12 a deposit which God's preserves forever.
2. God makes a deposit with us in time in 2Tim. 1:14 This deposit is Bible doctrine.
3. The believer in phase 2 makes a deposit with the Lord in 1Peter 4:19, which is the faith rest technique. You have some troubles and problems and you deposit them with Him. You put them in His hands for solutions. 1Peter 5:7 has the mechanics.
4. We make a deposit with the unbeliever. Rom. 1:14, which is witnessing. And we owe the gospel to the human race.
5. The believer in phase 2 makes a deposit with other believers, which is the communication of divine viewpoint with Christian friends. You don't run around and teach unbelievers 1 on 1. You don't give them goofy human viewpoint; any psychiatrist can do this. 2Tim. 2:2 Paul is teaching his school as a theology teacher.

2Tim. 1:13 Present active imperative **Keep on having** this means to stick it out; night by night; every Tuesday night. The command is to *keep on having*. When you get yourself in a jackpot, what do you want? You want someone to wave a magic wand and to take it away. You want circumstances to change right away, or awhile ago, or in a NY minute. God usually does not do that. Next Tuesday night, keep on; party of the year; keep on; next time, you and your husband have a fight; keep on (come in separate cars if necessary). The word *form* is ὑπολυτοσις = a *delineation, a pattern, a standard*. ὑψιαιγων = *pure, uncorrupted*. **the pattern of pure [uncorrupted] doctrine...** What corrupts doctrine? Someone sticking their nose into your business. Some of you have a lot of goofy idea, and Thieme is going to say a lot of things which will make you mad. Keep on having the pattern of uncorrupted doctrine. **which you have heard...** The aorist tense is a point of time. You can hear each Tuesday. You can only hear where you are here. Hearing is only a means of learning; it all depends; if you are on negative, you hear it, but you are negative. You can hear, but you are not learning. Hearing is a means of learning, but not the end. Some are sitting here and you can't wait to get out of here. You're on a trade out; and you will do that with her if she does something with you. Some of you are listening intently to tell her how I'm wrong; just come in and try to straighten me out. From the immediate source of me. **in faith a love which are in Christ Jesus.**

Two things will indicate positive volition. *In faith and love*; faith represents the faith rest technique and love represents the filling of the Holy Spirit. They will keep you on track, no matter what Thieme says or does. You may think the pastor needs to be mealy mouth.

There is a great stabilizer, which is being *in Christ Jesus*. One of the things which gives you some strength is being in Christ. This is your stabilizer.

2Tim. 1:14 **that good deposit** [doctrine] **which was committed unto you, guard it by the Holy Spirit who lives in us**. 3 things involved with doctrine: listening, faith and love. What are you going to do with it? You will keep or guard it. Φυλασσω = *to keep, to guard*. When you guard it and preserve it, then you apply it. You apply it by means of the Holy Spirit which lives inside of you.

2Tim. 1:15 αποστρεπω = *to revolt against, to repudiate, to reject*. **This you know, that all those in Asia have rejected** [turned away against] **me, among whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes**.

Phygellus means *a fugitive*; and he is obviously a fugitive from Bible doctrine. Paul was once his friend, but he has pseudo love with no stability. Hermogenes = *to be born of Mercury [the god of speech]*. Apparently Hermogenes was a speaker. He is glib, he has the gift of gab, but he has no doctrine to back it up. Maybe you can't wait to get out of here; that is your privilege.

2Tim. 1:16 **The Lord gave** [aorist active optative; the optative is Paul's personal wish for a true friend; and God gave mercy to him in eternity past] **mercy** [grace in action] **to the household of Onesiphorus, for he often** [frequently, many times, consistently] **refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain;...** And this mercy was not just to Onesiphorus, but to his entire family. A parent can learn doctrine and God will provide for the children. There is a direct relationship between a person learning doctrine and blessing to their children. This cuts off that age old excuse. "I can't come to Bible class because I have to stay home with my children; I have an answer for that, but it is profane...that is the sorriest weakest excuse I have ever heard." Don't ever walk up to Bob and apologize about not coming to class because of your kids. Onesiphorus is probably dead at this time. We don't know what he has done; but when you learn doctrine, you are providing a spiritual heritage for the next generation. Mercy is grace in action.

Have you ever been refreshing to anyone else in the human race or are you a pain in the neck. There is a necessity for learning Bible doctrine. We cannot afford my believers who are a pain in the neck.

Αναψυχω = *to breathe again; to refresh, to revive*. When you learn Bible doctrine, you are going to be refreshing to those around you. It may be in the office, the home or in the barracks; but you will have a ministry of refreshment to others.

When Onesiphorus went to Rome, he looked up Paul and refreshed him. In Rome, he was not ashamed. This is true love; category #3 love.

Onesiphorus had a true friendship with Paul, he has cat #1 love for God, and he had a great family. God the Holy Spirit gives him one of the highest honors that a person can receive. This is person who is famous in God's sight. You life is involved with people and whether you are auld lang signe or not; and Tuesday night is for doctrine, so that you can be refreshing to someone before you die. What a tragedy for a believer to be a phoney to someone. This is where you need Bible doctrine. In v. 18, the Lord has given to him.

2Tim. 1:17–18 **but when he arrived in Rome, he sought me out very diligently and found me. The Lord grant to him that he may find mercy from the Lord in that Day; and you know very well how many ways he ministered to me at Ephesus.**

Onesiphorus is a regular believer; he is not a preacher, an evangelist; he was the man in the pew. He can be a source of refreshment and blessing. You can sit in the pew and be a jackass, but there are jackasses in the pulpit. You can be negative, but there are people in the pulpit who are negative.

1Cor. 3:1

Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #1

circa 2/4/69

This begins a basic training course. Our textbook is the Bible. Basic doctrine is found in the doctrine. The you will need to familiarize yourself with the Bible. It is filled with houses and streets. "You do not lose face by looking up something in the index around here; not unless it takes an hour."

By way of introduction, a few propositions:

A Few Propositions

1. God exists. This course will have a great deal to say about God. Whether you believe God exists is not the issue. Properly, you would say, on the basis of rationalism or empiricism, God does not exist. Just saying "I don't believe that God exists" is not too bright. There are 3 systems of perception: rationalism, empiricism, or faith. Just write these down and we will develop them later on. God exists eternally.
2. God reveals Himself. We are here indirectly; Adam directly; and it is only fair that God reveal Himself. If He has always existed and if He is going to reveal Himself to man, then....
3. God must reveal Himself in a way that makes sense. If you stick around long enough, you will find that out. God makes organized sense because God is organized.
4. God has a plan. The objective of this course is to delineate this plan; to brief us on this plan. God has a plan specifically for you.
5. I am human, which begins to pull together the purpose for this course. I am a biped with a soul. The hook up is, God has a plan for me. That is why we are here.
6. If these things are true, then I owe God a hearing.

No one is asking you to buy anything and no one has passed out a card asking you to put your name on it. No one is selling anything. Whether you show up or not, that is between you and God. Now that you are here, you might as well be reasonable about it and relax. No one is going to hit you up for money or ask you to join anything. You have nothing to give Bob; he is there to give you something. You have been looking around for a catch.

The religious types are the worst. Religion blots out the plan of God. God's plan is totally opposed and antagonistic to religion. Religion is the worst thing which ever happened to this world. God's plan is anti-religion. Religion is designed by Satan to make you prejudice against the plan of grace. The objective is to develop the plan of God.

God exists, God reveals, what God reveals makes sense, God has a plan, God has a plan for us; I owe God a hearing.

God's plan is divided into 3 phases.

1. Phase one is all that God had to do to be compatible with us forever as well as in time. We believe in Jesus Christ.
2. Phase two is the believer in time; God's plan for us in plan, and His plan is designed to give us happiness in time. God's plan for our life begins at the cross.
3. Phase three is our life in eternity.

Most everyone here probably has believed in Jesus Christ. God is very well organized. It is necessary as individual believers get organized to receive organized information. If you are planning on a number of other things, hating someone, with lust for someone, with vindictiveness or jealousy; that means you are disorganized. If this is the case, you cannot learn God's plan until you learn this technique. Assuming that most of you are believers in Jesus Christ. It is important to teach rebound first, so that we can understand the plan of God. He is going to start with us when we were born and the rebound technique.

When we were born, we became a real person with a soul. Inside of our soul was the sin nature which put us behind the 8 ball with God. At some point, we become aware of our existence. Someone calls us by our name and we respond; and we see ourselves in the mirror and we know who we are. All conscious thinking is done with vocabulary. We begin with a vocabulary which is devoid of content. You have no way to say you are hungry; so you open your mouth and let columns of air to come through. The first time you want to indicate your displeasure—a pin sticks you from your diaper. You also have emotion. Some feel loved and some do not, and psychology tries to tell us this or that. A baby has no teeth and no norms and standards. We are born with a full-blown old sin nature. The first bit of nomenclature is the old sin nature. Everyone is born with one. Passed down through the father in copulation. No matter what the kid looks like or acts like, every baby has an old sin nature. Babies always look beautiful to mothers. Bob thought Bobby looked horrible. "Is that my son?"

Colonel held up a football for Bobby; and the funniest thing was to listen to those guys, and they were all trying to say something nice about Bobby, and Thieme said, "He looks like

hell, doesn't he?" Generally, most people have to take the attitude that babies are beautiful and little children are nice; but that is human viewpoint. However, God doesn't like babies. "Father, we really have something in common." One exception: Jesus Christ. It has nothing to do with what they look like, but because babies have old sin natures, which means they are born spiritually dead. All members of the human race are born unlovely to God. We are all born spiritually dead, except for Jesus Christ. It is erroneous that you get a sin nature when you first sin; God already dislikes us prior to that. When we are born as babies, we have done nothing, good or bad. A part of the soul is the old sin nature. Eph. 2:1: **and you were made alive who were dead in trespasses and sin.** Rom. 5:12 From God's standpoint, we are dead.

the first thing a child says is "Momma" and then "dadda" and then "No" or "I won't" Hello, old sin nature; there is it. The old sin nature has an area of weakness and all sins emanate from this area of weakness. 3 categories: mental attitude sins: pride, bitterness, vindictiveness, guilt, self-pity. These are the most devastating sins in life. This is the worst category of sins. And every member of the human race will sooner or later have mental attitude sins.

One ground rule in this class: play poker, even if I walk all over you. I don't know many of you personally and I don't follow you around; but I can tell what you are thinking at time. So, relax. You might be a real heavy mental attitude sinner. Don't feel alone. Everyone has an old sin nature. Inside of this old sin nature, there is no one apart from Jesus Christ, who has not committed lots of mental attitude sins. This is a category. What you think can be a sin.

Sins of the tongue is the 2nd category. One match, one ash and you can burn down a forest. One spark and the whole forest can be burned down.

The 3rd category are overt sins, and they generally have to do with someone else: murder, adultery, drunkenness.

Some of you may have taboos from your background which you think are sins. If you think there are things that you cannot do, like chewing bubble gum is a sin; then you are wrong. You have a trend toward asceticism, and you may wear all black and think that God is not pleased with people who smile. Mentions Ned Sparks a movie star who could pull this off.

Personality is not a sin; having a personality is not sinful. Some of you have a very happy personality; some are intense; some are relaxed, and some are in between (dour); you may have a very obnoxious personality to others. It is not a sin to smile or to frown or to keep a straight face. It is not sinful to wear red or black; or to follow your own inclinations with regards to dress. It is not sinful for women to wear slacks, even though some of them look like you know what. "Some of you have a hard time because I have already stepped on your prejudices. You don't like that I am not preaching sin." The sin nature is in the soul and you cannot see the sin nature.

You have a right to your privacy; but God can see your old sin nature moment by moment. God can see all sins that you commit, overt and hidden.

The old sin nature has an area of strength; and it produces good, and we call that human good. God does not like sin or human good, because they both come from the old sin nature. I am sure you have been around someone who was right and you were wrong and you loved them for it. Bob grew up with a self righteous sister and very prissy and it irritated Bob to know a prissy, self righteous female. Bob can recall many times when she was right and he was wrong and he did not like her at all and did not like that at all. Bob remembers disliking his sister more than anyone else, and clenching his fist, and his dad saying, "You lay a hand on her and I will tear your head off." Bob felt the same way about libs who are trying to save the world. God despises human good; and that is not even a literal translation. Every old sin nature has trends: toward lasciviousness or asceticism. Generally, people move in one direction or the other. This is why there are those who are playboys and others who are Mahatma Gandhi types. What God does not do is, He does not touch that old sin nature. You walk right into the Christian life with a full-blown old sin nature. Whatever trends you have in the old sin nature and however your old sin nature operates, there is nothing you can do to change it. When your old sin nature is in control, one of those trends tends to be predominant.

Now, after salvation, you have committed perhaps 100,000 sins and they are knocked out. Jesus Christ died for those sins. All of your sins were poured out on Him and judged. However, after you accept Jesus Christ as Savior, you might live for 50 years and commit a million sins, on the other side of the cross. You will commit more sins as a Christian than you did as an unbeliever, if you were saved early. Jesus Christ died for all of our sins and, at the cross, He rejected human good. The plan of God always operates on divine good and never on human good. Religion does more talking about human good and it cranks out more human good; and religion offers all of these things which we should do in order to impress God. All the human good in the world will not save one person. Human good stinks to God.

Maybe before salvation, you performed 100,000 acts of human good; and maybe after salvation, you perform a million acts of human good. However, God will not allow even 1 unit of human good into heaven.

There is also the lust pattern in the human race. Lust is a desire. Sometimes it is an insatiable desire. You might desire recognition; you might desire sex, you might desire money. Approbation lust is why some kids take dares. You may do something particularly physical at a party to get attention. Approbation lust is a motivation in life and sometimes you like to organize those who give you attention; that is power lust. As life develops, there is sexual lust. There is always the desire for things; materialism lust.

When you accept Jesus Christ as Savior, God makes you a new creature. Still, you walk into the Christian life with an old sin nature. So you walk into the Christian life with something old and something new. God's attitude does not change toward the old sin nature. It still cranks out sins and it still cranks out human good and it is still motivated by

lust. And, on the other side of the cross, someone wants you to stand up and give a glowing testimony a week after you have been saved. They'll get the captain of the football team or the social butterfly, etc. That is public relations. That is a gimmick. The first thing you want with a baby, is you don't want them to make any noise; you want them to be quiet.

Just because a new believer is a VIP does not mean that God feels any differently about them. We all have the sin nature but we have different ways of showing it. One of the 34 things which God gives us at salvation is the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. All you will learn with no doctrine, is how to hide the old sin nature. You learn to cover the old sin nature. You learn the ground rules. You will develop into a world's prize phoney and any intelligent unbeliever can spot them right away. You know there is no change there; you still have the sin nature. In order for you to avoid hypocrisy. There is no operation which can remove the old sin nature. It is not removed. One of the things which causes the ascetic to have trouble is, the evangelist said I'd always be happy and I would not sin any more and then I wonder, what is going on? And this person goes back and tries it again and again; and all he needs is briefing. He just needs to be straightened out.

The old sin nature is capable of lust motivation; it can produce 3 categories of sins. There is nothing which God can use of the old sin nature in the Christian life. When a person is under the control of the old sin nature, after the cross, he is called a carnal Christian. Carnal is an old English word which means *fleshly*. The flesh is sometimes used to refer to the old sin nature. The carnal Christian is any Christian when he sins.

You may be shocked the first time you sin after salvation; but there is an answer. When a person learns how to fly, they go up and they learn the basic parts of the plane and how these things perform a variety of functions. You get strapped in. This is the wheel; then they take you for your familiarization ride. But once you are in the air, you must know stall recovery. It depends on how dramatic they will be. A lot of them like to force the stick forward and horseback on it and sit on its tail and the student is turning green, and turn it into a hammerhead. Or suddenly, that hum stops, and the plane starts going down. The plane has a bad attitude. A disastrous attitude. The instructor teaches you this so you don't break your neck and his as well. He teaches his student how to recover from a stall with lots of altitude. And taking off and landing, which you might think are first, are not first at all. Bob can't teach you anything else until he teaches stall recovery. You cannot learn spiritual phenomena when under the control of your old sin nature.

1Cor. 3:1: **And I, brothers** [members of the family of God; you might be in a family, but you do not call everyone in your family brother this or sister that; that sounds phoney; it is corny and there is nothing corny about the Christian way of life], **could not speak to you as spiritual** and you might say, *well who is spiritual?* Then what is spiritual? A feeling like being on cloud 54 talking to angels and God. That's junk. Spiritual is being filled with the Holy Spirit. If the Holy Spirit does not control your life, then you are carnal. You can be spiritual with a sinus headache. You can be spiritual and have a headache; you can be sleepy, you can be alert. You have to be controlled by the Holy Spirit to learn Bible doctrine. The most difficult thing in flying is holding a perfect course with bad weather and cross winds.

Holding your altitude and a course is the most difficult thing in flying. And you don't learn that by an instructor taking you up for a couple split s's or barrel rolls. **but as unto carnal** Every believer priest must learn to rebound. The biggest handup to Bible doctrine is being out of fellowship. **even as unto babies in Christ;...** You have spirituality or carnality. Paul cannot get through to them when they are out of fellowship. When they are out of fellowship, he cannot bring them back. You cannot beat them back in. You don't work your way back in. You do not pay money to get back in. There is a stall recovery technique.

To get carnal, all you have to do is commit one sin. You stay under the control of the Holy Spirit until the first time that you sin. You keep your old sin nature. You stay out and continue to sin and to do acts of human good; and you stay there until you rebound. Since they are still carnal. **for whereas among you there is envying and strife** Notice how they are out of fellowship due to mental attitude sins and because of jealousy, you seek revenge, you seek to hurt, you seek to judge. Strife is the antithesis of relaxation. Inside of the bottom circle you can have an relaxed mental attitude. Outside, you flare up with mental attitude sins. **and divisions. Aren't you carnal and walk as men?** Everyone brings their sin nature into the Christian life. When you are controlled by your old sin nature, you walk or live like an unbeliever. You may act like a religious unbeliever or like an irreligious unbeliever. Like a kooky one or a smart one. Your enemy, the old sin nature, is built-in; it is born it. It will not end until you use your stall recovery.

The word believe means non-meritorious thinking. The word *confess* means to cite or to name something. They are both compatible with the plan of God. Grace is God doing something for us. Man simply receives in a nonmeritorious manner what God provides. So salvation is begun at the point of grace, the cross, **for by grace are you saved**. The 20 year old commits 100,000 sins before the cross. He is saved, but he is jealous. He is in a stall. Jealousy does not come alone; there will be other sins which join it. The believer is now said to be carnal. He has not lost his salvation. God loves him; love maximum. He is under discipline here, and he must recover. The first word is *if*; a 3rd class condition. You must decide what you will do. When you do it, you are on positive volition; and when you refuse to go that route, you are on negative volition.

!John 1:9 **If we cite** [or name, or identify] **our sins** [to God] and God always responds in grace. Simply name your sin to God. Every believer priest must have privacy to live his life unto God. He committed adultery and he had someone killed; but he said against **You and You only have I sinned**. **He is faithful** [consistent] **and just** [God is just because He has already judged that sin on the cross; God the Father judged that sin right there. **to forgive us our sin and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness**.

Now that is a summary of the rebound technique. Before 7:45 next Tuesday night, think over your sins and name them before starting Bible class.

The 7 propositions related to basic training

1. God exists.
2. God reveals Himself.
3. God makes organized sense.
4. God therefore has a plan.
5. I am a human being, so God has a plan for me.
6. Since God has a plan for me, I owe God a hearing.
7. The opportunity comes through the teaching of basic doctrine.

What we do with the information from Bible class is our own private business. You can enjoy it, you can ridicule it. Every believer in Jesus Christ is a priest, and every believer-priest has the right to orient to the plan of God or be ignorant of the plan of God; or to disengage from the plan of God. Bob's job is to lay it on the line.

If you came of your own volition, fine, and you will end up with daily happiness. If someone pressured you into coming, don't get feisty with me. I don't want to get into an argument with you, but if you do, I will knock you right into the ground. You don't expect a minister to talk that way because you think the minister is supposed to be a rug that you dust your feet on to impress your friends. Every time I begin a basic course, there is at least one smart aleck who wants to get feisty. We have lots of exits. We are not going to ask you for a dime. If you have a legitimate question, raise your hand and I will answer your questions. However, this is not a place for public counseling. Ron and Buddy Dano do the counseling.

I have information for you and in about 90 days, you should be pretty well briefed.

Rebound technique is where we started. It is not the logical beginning, but the operational beginning. Maximum perspicacity of spiritual phenomena is based upon the rebound technique.

Rebound involves 3 verbs: confess it (1John 1:9)), forget it (Philip 3:13) and isolate it (Heb. 12:15).

1Co 1:2 **To the church of God** [believers] **that is in Corinth, to those sanctified** *sanctify* means *to be set apart*. **in Christ Jesus**, being in Christ is positional truth; all believers are in Christ; all of the Corinthians are said to be sanctified and scar tissue apart in Christ Jesus. As a believer you may have thought you have lost your salvation at one time or another and you may have weird concepts about your own spiritual life, e.g., I am a horrible believer or I am a great believer. However, bear in mind, there are a lot of unbelievers in this world who are a lot better than you are. Part of this basic course is to point out what kind of a believer you are; are you a growing believer or are you some kind of a self righteous jackass. Some of you have tried a number of things, like a points program. Perhaps you got into the tongues system, and, afterwards, you had depression; you went from ecstasies to depression; there is no consistency. God has provided a way for you to have true love in

4 categories. The first informational point begins with believing in Jesus Christ and being placed into Christ.

The Doctrine of Positional Truth

1. All believers are sanctified in Jesus Christ. There is no system of eyeball engineering. You can observe your own physical growth easily. There is no way to determine anything overtly except to maybe determine your physical age. The mechanics: Jesus Christ is in heaven at the right hand of the Father. At the moment we believe in Christ, something happens. **For by means of one Spirit we are all baptized into Christ.** This is not an experience; it is something which God the Holy Spirit does for us. You did not feel it, you did not see it, you do not hear it.
2. Positional truth belongs to the carnal as well as the spiritual believer. Calling upon the name of the Lord, and you will be saved. This is synonymous with believing in Jesus Christ. Sanctified in Christ Jesus means you are set apart unto God. We have a verb and a noun. If you have personally believed in Jesus Christ, no matter when it happens, you are a saint; you have been sanctified. The moment you believe in Jesus Christ, you are placed into Christ. The believers in the Corinthian church were very carnal; yet they are all saints and they are all sanctified. You believers are all saints. There perfect tense is something which happened in the past with results which go on forever. Notice, it is *in Christ*. This is found over and over in the Bible. This is Christianity. What is important is what God does for us at the moment of salvation. This information is a repetition from last time. This is repeated so we can fit this into a category of doctrine. Positional truth is what is always true. Believers call each other a number of things; however, we do not necessarily call each other things like brother this and sister that. This is corny and phoney. The first time someone called Thieme brother Bob, he didn't know whether to slug him or laugh. He laughed. Some believers call other believers things which are not very kind. Profanity is using the Lord's name in vain. Expletives are not profanity; *hell, and damn, and you*. You call believers things. You call them by the first name. You call them certain types of names. You might say some nice things about believers and maybe you say some nice things; but maybe you ought to try the vocative *saint*. We are saints. The sorriest believer who ever lived is a saint; the best believer who ever lived is a saint. We are saints because of what God does. God enters us into union with Jesus Christ.
3. Positional truth has two results:
 - a. Eternal life. Jesus Christ is eternal life (1John 5:11–12). He who has the Son has life. Eternal life resides in Jesus Christ. When we entered into union with Christ, we share his eternal life. This is our life. We are in Christ at the moment that we believe. Look at the silly things you have done in the past. You accepted Christ in the past and you were saved. So, years later, you go to an evangelistic meeting, and you come forward for a reaffirmation of faith. This rededication is blasphemy. No matter what the age was when you believed in Jesus Christ, you are saved, and you don't get anything else by walking up and down aisles. This is just one of the 34 things which God gave us. It is imperative for us to understand that we are in union with Jesus

Christ; and there is nothing that we can do to get out of the top circle. You can renounce Jesus Christ; you can commit the worst sin ever; you can kill a 5th a day, and you are still in Christ. You may not know where you are or even in what town you are in; but you are still in Christ. There is nothing that you can do to reverse that positional. God Himself can't change it. God loves you with a perfect love, no matter how much you have failed. You may think that you have been the greatest Christian in the world; still, you don't lose your salvation. What you have done for God is nothing. What God does for you is everything. You may impress a lot of people around you, but you will never impress God. This course will give you some fresh food for thought. "I've already spotted two guys who have begun to take notes so they can tell the gal next to them and tell them why they won't be coming back." If you are on negative volition, then you will suffer for the next hour. 1John 5:11-12

- b. Imputed righteousness. +R. This is absolute righteousness. 2Cor. 5:21 tells us that we have His righteousness. We are born in the hole insofar as God is concerned. Let's say we owe Him \$1,000,000 and we put together a few dollars. This is how we are born. God does something about this. -R cannot have fellowship with +R; there is no basis for fellowship. At the cross, Jesus Christ was judged for our sins, and the debit side is wiped out. However, even though the debit side is wiped out, there must be something on the credit side in order for us to live with God forever. We need His life and His +R in order to spend eternity with God. We share His life and His righteousness because we are in Him. We have these two things and no one can take these things from us. Do not confuse the credit of +R with your own personal righteousness.
4. Positional truth protects every believer from eternal judgment at the Great White Throne. We are in Christ; and Rom. 8:1 says: **There is now, therefore, no judgment to those who are in Christ.**
5. Positional truth defines two deep theological doctrines: election and predestination. Eph. 1:3: **Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us [provided happiness for us] in Christ with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places,...** The happiness of God does not depend upon circumstances. Most people's happiness depends upon their circumstances. Your circumstances cannot always be pleasant. God provides for us a perfect happiness. We can even be married and happy. Most of those who are single wish they could be married, and vice versa. Everyone wants to be what someone else is. However, trade your circumstances and you find out that it is a dead end. Eph. 1:3: Happiness belongs to God the Father and He has provided this happiness for us in the Heavens in Christ. Jesus Christ is God and Jesus Christ has perfect happiness; and being in union with Him means that we can potentially enjoy perfect happiness. Eph 1:4: **...even as he elected us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy [saints] and blameless before him. In love** Jesus Christ knew billions of years ago that we would go + toward Jesus Christ. God the Father in eternity past elected God the Son; and when we enter into union with Christ, we are elected in

Him. We were elected in eternity past because we are in Christ. Positional truth explains election. The moment that Christ was elected, He was also given a destiny. Now that we are in union with Christ, we share His destiny. We have a relationship with God and that relationship is based upon grace. This relationship is perfect and we cannot improve it or make it worse. God's planning must go back billions of years ago. Every believer is in Him and shares His election. At salvation, God loves us with maximum love; and He loves us with this maximum love whether we are having a good day or a lousy day. God the Father has maximum love for Jesus Christ. We are always in union with Christ, and we are loved by God as much as He loves Jesus Christ, as we are in Him. God the Father loves believers that we can't stand as much as He loves us. Eph 1:5: **...He predestined us for adoption through Jesus Christ, according to the purpose of his will,...**

6. Therefore, positional truth produces a new creature in Christ. 2Cor. 5:17 If any man is in Christ, then he is a new creature. He is new because of what God does for him, not because of what we do for Him. "On the day that I was saved, I took 5 bottles of scotch and poured them down the drain..." and you are very proud of that. You can describe this very graphically and then you say, "If any man is in Christ, he is a new creature." You are not a new creature because you quit drinker. Bob went to see his dad's drinking partner, and he noticed, there was no martinis and no ice bucket, and this guy gave a glowing testimony about how he went on the wagon. He had made a complete and total change and he is in hell today. You are not a new creature because of what you do. He did something. He went completely on the wagon and that took some doing. He was not saved so he did not have eternal life. You may have done some very commendable things after being saved and that is fine; but that is not the Christian way of life and that is not being a new creature in Christ. Grace is God doing the work and man receives what God provides and man receives this in a nonmeritorious manner. You are not a new creature because you cleaned up your life; because you are no longer on the town. You are a new creature because you are in Christ. 2Cor. 5:17 is not experiential but it is principle. You are a new creature because of what God does. Religion or legalism is man doing the work and God, theoretically, is supposed to bless us based upon what we do. Maybe we tried the 10% deal: maybe we are trying to get from God something, so we bribe Him with 10% of our measly income. You think that you can do and God will bless. Some of you maybe have gone farther than than—you go to prayer meeting. To you, God is a super genie; all you have to do is figure out how to rub Him, and you can get what you want out of Him. Legalism is flying in a jet and wanting to get out and help the jet move faster by pushing it. Surprise: God doesn't need your help. God can get along without you. He can get along without any one of us. God loves us with a perfect love; a maximum love. And there we are outside trying to push the jet. It is hard to get used to being a new creature, like getting used to a new anything. A new car, a new suit, a new house. Something new takes some getting used to; some orientation. When you try to help God, you become a pain in the neck. You were nicer before you became a Christian. If you miss the briefing, you will never get to the target. You have to be briefed. Briefing is learning Bible doctrine.

7. Positional truth guarantees eternal security. **Neither death nor life will separate you from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus,...** Death cannot take you out; neither can angels. **...nor angels, nor principalities nor powers, nor things present nor things to come, nor height nor depth nor any other creature can separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus.**

Perhaps you have repented, so I will give you point 1 again. Repent means to change your mind; not to feel sorry for anything.

Summary: 1John 5:11–12 We share His eternal life; and share His righteousness; we share His election; we share His destiny (Eph. 1:5); we share His Sonship; we share his heirship (we are joint heirs; we are heirs of God); and we are priests, which means that we are in full-time Christian service. Every believer is in full-time Christian service. As a priest, we have the right to serve God, the right to rebound. Every believer does this for himself; every believer avoids public confession of sin. Sharing sins. We have the right to pray, the right to give, the right to rebound—all because we are in Christ. We are given these experiential things based upon positional truth.

This brings us right back to rebound. **You are yet carnal and walk as men, so I could not communicate meat to you, but only milk.**

1John 1:9: **If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.** How we feel about a sin is inconsequential. It is how God feels about the sin which is important. The sin which we know, we confess; or sins. When you accept Christ as Savior, you still have an old sin nature, and you still sin, and you still sin deliberately. When you sin, you name the sin. Why does God forgive us this sin? Christ paid for our sins; our sin went to court at the cross; it was poured out on Jesus Christ on the cross. He is *faithful*; which means that He forgives us our sins every single time. He cleanses us from all unrighteousness. He also died for the unknown sins, and God forgives us for those.

A certain man had two sons. They were his sons at the beginning. One of them was the prodigal son; and the other was the elder brother. The father divides out their inheritance. After getting an inheritance, the prodigal son takes this cash and goes to a foreign country and he lives it up. It is so bad, he finds himself eating pig slop. He realized that his father's servants eat better than this. So, he goes to return to his father. He is always his father's son. Bob Thieme was very angry with Bob and sometimes he was very proud. In Beverly Hills, they lived next door to a house being built, and the contractor caught Bob tearing the place up, the day before Christmas. He invited the contractor in, gave him a drink; wrote him a check; and then, after he left, he beat Bob so that he did not sit down until after New Years. He also used to sit on the bench watching Bob play football; until a ref missed a call, and Bob Sr. went out and punched the ref.

So, the elder brother hears this party going on, and the party is for the brother who returned. And the elder brother got out of fellowship; but the prodigal son was back in. They are both sons of their father.

You might be self righteous and you might be a prodigal son type; but you both get back into fellowship the same way—naming your sins.

Coming back a week from Tuesday night.

1Cor. 1:2b **called to be saints together with all those who in every place call upon the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, both their Lord and ours:**

Heb. 12:12 Chain Sinning Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #3 circa 2/25/69

Confess it, forget it, isolate it. The 3 principles. 1John 1:9: **If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.**

Philip. 3:13 **Forgetting those things which are behind**

Heb. 12:12 Isolation of sin

All sins were judged at the cross; and our Lord rejected human good from the cross. When the believer confesses or names his sin, God forgives that sin and He cleanses us from all unrighteousness. The sin is named, that sin was judged on the cross; God is faithful, meaning that He does the same thing every time. There is volition. Maybe we will confess our sin and maybe we will not.

We have union with Christ; we share the righteousness of Christ and we share the life of Christ. When we sin, we are out of fellowship. Every believer is either spiritual or carnal. The only way to get back in is to confess that sin. We can confess our sins and get right back out of fellowship 60 seconds later.

God cannot do anything else but forgive a sin which we have named to Him. It is impossible for God to do anything other than forgive us. Once God has forgotten a sin, we have no right to try to remember it. We are dealing with a confessed sin; it is forgiven and it is blotted out, and, for the moment, we are restored to fellowship. God forgets a sin, no matter how bad it is; you may have a nagging mother-in-law, nagging wife or nagging husband, and they remember this sin. God has forgotten it. There are always unknown sins associated with these and they are forgiven. You cannot earn it; you cannot deserve it. This is the only way to get forgiveness.

False Systems of Restoring Fellowship

1. You cannot beg God for forgiveness. Begging is legalism. This usually means that you are suffering from some kind of a guilt complex. Grace eliminates all forms of begging.
2. A system of penance—penance is works, penance is human good, and we are never forgiven for penance.
3. Sincerity will not gain us forgiveness. Sincerity is a whitewashing of the sin nature; sincerity is phoney. By being sincere and promising God you will never do it again, is a joke. God has never forgiven anyone for any of these systems.

4. God will not forgive us if we give money to the church. You cannot buy forgiveness. It is paid for at the cross.

The background for rebound is, we are priests and everyone has the right to represent themselves before God. If you are 1 degree above an idiot, you can name your sins to God; and if you are genius, you can get back into fellowship by naming your sins. God's plan works for all IQ's. It is not as hard as driving a car. This used to be difficult; and driving a car is difficult compared to rebound.

Don't add anything to rebound: confess and beg and come crawling to God and beg Him and beg Him and beg Him. The plan of God is grace all the way. When Jesus said, It is finished, it was done in the past with results that continue forever. God did not slip up on any sin that you have committed. He paid for every single sin on the cross. Since the day we have accepted Christ as Savior, for the rest of your life, no matter how hard you try, you will not be able to commit a sin which was not judged on the cross. Our blessing depends upon 1John 1:9. Bob uses rebound every day, and sometimes while teaching class; he might spot someone in the audience and he wants to go down there and clean up on them. And he knows this works both ways. You don't need this class if you only sin once or twice a month; you need a padded cell.

If suffering continues after rebound, then that suffering is designed for blessing.

The verb is ἀνορθω = *to straight again; to restore again to straightness or to vigor; to re-erect; to reinvigorate; to rebuild a structure*. In the ancient world, the hands hanging down refer to a believer out of fellowship. He cannot produce under the divine plan. This becomes a synonym for the rebound technique.

Synonyms for Rebound

1. Confess or to name you sin.
2. To judge yourself 1Cor. 11:31
3. Yield, as in Rom. 6:13 and Rom. 12:1, which is the principle of 1John 1:9
4. Lift up your hands. Heb. 12:12
5. Make straight paths Heb. 12:13
6. Lay aside every weight Heb. 12:1
7. Be in subjection to the Father of spirits and live Heb. 12:9

Heb. 12:12a: **Therefore lift up your drooping hands**

Bob was working on a ranch; he mounted up and they went way out in the country. He noticed that everyone had their hands up in the air. Bob thought it was too weird. Bob was disgusted.

People would load with the hands and arms. They would become tired and their hands would hang down. The emphasis is upon production. God has a plan for your life. His plan for our life is absolutely perfect.

The weak knees is also an inability to work.

When you find the word *lest*, it is a negative purpose clause. *That* plus a negative.

Heb. 12:12b–13a **and strengthen your weak knees, and make straight paths for your feet,**

You have to get back into fellowship. His plan for our life goes nowhere until we are back in fellowship. By an act of volition, you put yourself back into the plan of God.

Εκτρέπω = *to turn aside, to swerve*. This is to swerve away from the plan of God. Chain sinning is not a run of sin in our life. Out of this sin, which has already been forgiven, come other sins. Whatever other sins we commit are not involved.

Chain sinning is lighting one sin off another sin. The mental attitude sin in v. 15 is bitterness which pops up due to another sin. It may lead to a series of sins. You start with a forgiven sin. Bob knows Christians who have been Christians for 30 years because they light one sin off another and they never grow up. Bob knows a woman in California who is like this. She might say, *rebound does not work*.

Mental attitude sins are the worst category of sins. These sins produce self-induced misery. We make ourselves miserable. Out of these spring all kinds of sins. Often, this begins as a little spark in a church and it burns down the whole forest.

Εκτρέπω is in the aorist tense. With a negative: *does not swerve*. It is at the point of time when we confess a sin. Subjunctive mood means potential.

Chain Sinning

This might be a good place to see examples of chain sinning. Some of these are almost automatic reactions in life which must be broken up.

1. Bitterness is a sin which involves someone else. It involves someone else or, after you confess the sin, the suffering continues. It may be diminished and it may continue at the same intensity. Our sin is blotted out at rebound. Bitterness is a mental attitude sin. This sets us up for a series of sins. We can be bitter toward God and we can be bitter toward people. This leads to implacability which can lead to antagonism which leads to revenge motivation and that may lead to a variety of actions, e.g., gossip and maligning. You have one believer acting like a monster, totally repulsive and totally miserable. Some people try to sublimate. You may try to tie one on or you try to get the rosy glow with tongues, which will lead to an emotional hangover. The answer is rebound.
2. Guilt-association which leads to a built complex. Self-consciousness, mentality, volition, emotion, conscience and the old sin nature, which is the enemy of the soul.

A woman aborts and from then on, anything which goes wrong in her life, she associates it with abortion. A person is not a person until after they are born. It is not murder to abort. That sets up something. She begins to be depressed which leads to a feeling of guilt. This starts some pressure. In her mentality she begins to associate every problem which comes along with her abortion. Now, she may have confessed the abortion and all things connected with it. However, she goes back and associates every problem with it because she has a guilt-complex. She can go all the way to become psycho. This is a guilt complex because it involves all the parts of the soul. This is an unpardonable sin in her eyes. A guilt complex is a thousand times worse than an abortion. Mental attitude sins are the worse. She is perpetually out of fellowship, and when any pleasant thing occurs, she looks for trouble to occur. She associates. From her guilt complex, she gets out of it. She may carry hatred or vindictiveness for the man involved. Maybe there is an attempt to get revenge. In addition to that, she carries in her soul scar tissue. She cannot have a happy life if the rm comes along. God who loves her dearly. She is continually off balance because there are so many sins associated with a guilt complex. She can end up in a psycho ward. The guilt complex factor is disussed by psychiatrists all the time. You do not have to spend your entire life in misery in order to make it up to God. Bob had dinner with Bobby the other night in Austin. Now, Bob can't say, "Bobby, I am concerned about a sin you committed 10 years ago and I think I need to discipline you for this." He would be out of line. After a year of being out of fellowship, David finally confessed Bathsheba and his sin with her. He had 26 fabulous years after that sin. At some point, we need to have a breakthrough on the grace of God. God has never designed His plan for us to feel guilty for even one second. If we feel guilty, we are out of line. We have no right to a guilt complex; not even for a second. Rom. 14 **whatsoever is not of faith is sin** (which is a guilt complex).

3. Public confession of sins; or confessing your sins to various individuals. Any kind of a public confession of sins is out of wrong. When you stand up and name your sins, people are going to be divided over what you say; they will gossip about it; they will discuss it, when it is none of their business. About 5 people have come to Bob and they want to stand in front of the congregation and name their sins. Bob told them, he would personally thrown them off the stand. Privacy is the secret of the priesthood. God knows what we are thinking. Other people will think things; others will go out and gossip.
4. The intrusion upon divine prerogatives. Judging. The attempt to judge and condemn or hurt or condemn another believer. You can judg your own children; that is okay. You have no right to judge or condemn or discipline other believers. You can judge people on what they wear, but it is none of your business. How much makeup they wear or don't wear is none of our business. People have a right to express their own personality in their own way, provided that it is not sin. We don't have the right to tell anyone what they ought to do with their clothes or with their hair. A principle of Christianity: live and let live. Don't run around and try to straighten anyone out.

Ways to Chain Sin

1. You have a mental attitude sin
2. This leads to some other sin, like gossip or judging. You name a sin or sins connected with another person. These sins have discipline for them, but we get the discipline for the sins we mention as well as the discipline for whatever sins you commit. Matt. 7:2 triple compound discipline.
3. Operation patsy: blame someone else for your sins and failures.
4. Discussing your controversies with outside parties. Do not build your happiness with someone else's unhappiness. This leads to schisms.
5. The development of pseudo love in your life. Cat. 1 love toward God, Cat. 2 love toward a member of the opposite sex; cat. 3 love toward friends.
6. Over sensitivity; wearing your feelings on your sleeves. No allowing for people to be thinking about something else or too tired to smile. Over-sensitivity. You cannot be hypersensitive and enter into true love. You must have an relaxed mental attitude in order to get through life. No fear, anxiety, etc.

Even with the right person in cat. 2, with pseudo love, you will never properly love someone.

Whether you are restored or not depends upon whether you use 1John 1:9 or not. These things may come back. The final answer is to grow up. This is to develop new habits to orient you to society. You develop new factors so that you can deal with an adult society. You can be an adult man who plays with lead soldiers, but you don't do it publically. Bob supposes that all the ladies here had dolls. What happened to that sweet little girl in pigtails who played with dolls? She grew up. When Bob was a little boy, he had a big red rattle. Believe it or not, he gave that up. He has not played with a rattle for at least 48 years. You might ask him, *why*, and the only answer is, he has grown up. Other things are more attractive. Mental attitude sins can be handled with spiritual growth. There is no shortcut; there is no one-shot panacea. There is Bible class Tuesday after Tuesday after Tuesday.

Let's say that Bob gave a scathing denunciations of red rattles and dolls. Bob's job isn't to get us to give up anything. He is giving us information so that we can grow up and what we do when we grow up is between us and God. You may come back in a few months and say, *Damn, I don't have a taste for red rattles anymore.*

Heb. 12:13b **so that what is lame may not be put out of joint but rather let it be restored [healed]. Strive for peace with everyone, and for the holiness without which no one will see the Lord. See to it that no one fails to obtain the grace of God; that no "root of bitterness" springs up and causes trouble, and by it many become defiled.**

Heb. 12:13 Rebound Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #4 circa 3/4/69

Sounds like a full house.

A quote is taken from the Septuagint. The first phrase actually means to put your feet into the existing wheel tracks.

Synonyms for rebound: confess, judge yourself, yield, present your body is the same word as *yield*; a one-shot dedication is 100% totally useless. Top circle, accept Christ and you are in fellowship; bottom circle you are in and out of; in and out of fellowship.

Bob was out of fellowship immediately. He got out of fellowship so quick, he wasn't sure he was even saved. Bob went to a pastor and the pastor said, *yield, yield*; so Bob went out and sinned again. The next pastor said *yield and come to prayer meeting*; and Bob found out that they did not know what they were talking about.

If [3rd class condition] **we name** [or, *to acknowledge, to cite*] why can you simply name your sin and that puts you back into fellowship? Because Jesus died for our sins; each time, God does the same thing because He is faithful.

Some may be wondering why these people are coming in late, and some people drive 50 or 60 miles to Berachah; however, the ones who are late just come from the apartments across the way.

Confess, yield, judge yourself, lift up the hands which hang down, make straight paths, lay aside every weight, be in subjection to the Father of Spirits and live. The need for synonyms simply vary in emphasis. Some passages emphasize this and some that. Various aspects of rebound, and different aspects covered in different passages.

Confess it, forget it [since God forgets it, we can do no less], isolate it. Εκτρέπω = *to swerve out of the path*. Occupational hazard is chain sinning. The believer continues to sin.

Several ways covered the other night of how to chain sin. From a blotted out sin, you start to sin again. You accumulate. Chain sinning comes from chain smoking. A chain smoker never uses a lighter or a match; he lights one cigarette on another. This is a technical principle based upon a confessed sin.

Bitterness. You are involved in a sin with someone else, but you become bitter toward them, and you become antagonistic and you become bitter and then you malign and gossip; then the guilt complex. When you commit some kind of a sin, like abortion. "I've had all kinds of people come in—women—and they had an abortion 12 years ago, and they associate every problem in their life with the act of 12 years ago. There is emotional instability; she remembers it; her conscience has been seared, and there is not just a guilt reaction, but a complex of sins is set up. The worst thing you can carry around with you is a guilt complex. But you say, "I've done some terrible things; I will match you any day." You get up, dust yourself off, and get on with your life. We are here. We are still alive. When you confess your sin, God forgives you. He does not forgive us because we beg or promise Him we will never do it again. We might as well be realistic about these things. We simply name it. You are saying, "That is a license to sin." It is a license to serve.

Public confession of sin can set off a wave of sins. The congregation maligns and gossips and they are angry; and a congregation does not have the ability to forgive you. The pattern is sin, divine discipline; and discipline might continue, but it is now designed for blessings.

Discussing your sins with other people. You need to observe the privacy of your own priesthood. David committed adultery with Bathsheba, he got her husband murdered; but when it came to rebound, he said, “**Against You and You only have I sinned.**” The rest of the world may not know about your sin and even though God forgives you, you may or may not be forgiven by the congregation of believers. One of Bob’s jobs as a pastor is to kick people off the backs of others. Everyone has a right to their own privacy; and God does not need any help when it comes to disciplining others. It is amazing: God does not need help.

Attempting to judge others and to discipline them; parents have the right to discipline their children. Grandchildren don’t have the right to discipline their grandchildren; you already had your chance. When God judges, He is fair; and He knows all of the facts.

Triple compound discipline. Anytime you go to judge someone else, behind that judging is another sin of some sort. Some mental attitude sin. Out of mental attitude sins like jealousy, you malign, you judge, and you gossip. *Judging* is assigning to someone else sins, real or imagined. In so doing, you have special divine discipline designed for you. The sins that you name is triple compound discipline. Operation patsy. Blaming others for your sins and failures. If you don’t know many people, you can blame God.

Spreading your controversies with others; after having a fight, going around and telling everyone else your side of the story.

Implacability which develops vindictiveness toward others. Pseudo love toward a member of the opposite sex. Or, you have no friends. With pseudo love, you’re not going to have any friends.

The sin is forgiven immediately; aorist tense. You can confess a sin and it is blotted out. But you can get right out of fellowship again through chain sinning.

Διοκω = *to move toward a goal, to seek after something, to aspire to something*. The principle behind rebound is grace. Therefore, how do you orient to grace? One is peace; **He is our peace.**

Heb. 12:13a ...and make straight paths for your feet,

Heb. 12:13–14 ...and make straight paths for your feet, so that what is lame may not be put out of joint but rather let it be restored [healed]. Strive for peace with everyone, and for the holiness without which no one will see the Lord.

In the human spirit there is a shelf marked Soteriology. These are applied to the mentality of the soul. God planned it; the Son removed the barrier. Positional sanctification; we don't earn it and we don't deserve it. Carnal Corinthians. Present active participle which carries the weight of a command, because it is habitual. This is the stall recovery. *Επισκοπεω* = *looking diligently; over seeing, a commander taking responsibility for his command*. The Greeks used this as a military term for an inspector. We must take the responsibility of continuing in our sin. Forgiven sin is forgotten sin. God forgets it so we must forget it.

All chain sinning is accomplished with a mental attitude sin. You begin with *αγαπη* love, which is a relaxed mental attitude. You don't hate anyone; you are not upset or vindictive. You either have mental attitude sins or you have a relaxed mental attitude. The latter means that you isolate the sin. You perpetuate *αγαπη* love. You must take responsibility for yourself, for your own life. *Λεστ* introduced two negative purpose clauses. **That no one fails the grace of God.** Then *απο*, which introduces the grace of God.

Grace of God

1. Grace is all that God is free to do for man on the basis of the cross. Grace is the work of God on behalf of man. It is the work of the Trinity.
2. Grace depends upon Who and What God is. Grace depends upon God's character; that is the concept.
3. Grace versus legalism is the issue. Grace is God doing the work; divine good; man receives the benefit; legalism, man does the work and God gets the benefit.
4. Grace and sanctification. The greatest thing that God can do for a saved person is to make you like His Son. It is done positionally when we are put into union with Him. Phase II, experiential sanctification, the filling of the Holy Spirit produces the character of Christ. Phase III is ultimate sanctification, where we have a body like His.
5. The entrance factor, which is found in 1Peter 2:3 we may not be aware of what grace is exactly, but we have at least tasted it. We got it at salvation. Bob had a lot of Haig and Haig scotch, and Bob tasted some as a young boy. He knew exactly what it tasted like and he stays away from it. God is free to love us. He loves us when we are carnal; He loves us when we are spiritual. We may fail God in every possible way, God still loves us with a maximum amount of love. We have tasted grace and that is it.
6. God is constantly waiting to pour grace out on us. Isa. 30:18–19
7. The occupational hazard is disorientation to grace. Heb. 12:15
8. Grace in life. Psalm 103:8, 12 Eph. 2:8–9
9. Grace in phase II 2Cor. 12:9–10 2Peter 1Peter 5:12 1Cor. 15:10
10. The implications of grace:
 - a. God is perfect and His plan is perfect.
 - b. A perfect plan can only come from a perfect God.

- c. If any man can do anything meritorious, it is no longer perfect. The plan is no stronger than its weakest link. God is omnipotent. If a man can do anything meritorious in God's plan, that is the weak link.
 - d. Grace excludes human good in the plan of God.
 - e. Human good is the weak link which does not exist in the plan of God. There is no place in the plan of God for human good.
 - f. It is impossible for the believer to get outside of God's grace. God blesses us and He disciplines us in grace.
 - g. Grace is the antithesis of mental attitude sins. The antithesis of human pride.
11. 4 areas of human pride which reject grace. Most of you think when someone has good posture and looks you into the eye when speaking, you think they are proud. People can do this, and still be humble.
- a. The pride of the believer who rejects eternal security. Imagine having the nerve, the colossal gall that you can commit some sin that is greater than God's plan. You cannot commit any sin to lose your salvation. He thinks he can do something greater than the plan of God.
 - b. The pride of the believer who succumbs to adversity. He thinks that no one else suffers this way. *No one else has gone through what I have gone through.* Imagine a believer whining with all of God's matchless grace.
 - c. The pride of pseudo spirituality. He thinks his works and human good are greater than the plan of God.
 - d. The pride of the emotional believer. He thinks that his pride is greater than the grace of God.

Hustereô which means *to be deficient with regards to something*. A believer involved in a sin with another needs to confess the sin and move on. The second negative purpose clause is **so that no root of bitterness springs up**. A seed must die before a root springs up. Before there can be any sprouting, the seed must die. The believer must confess the sin. That sin was judged on the cross. When you name that sin, it is dead. The worst thing that can happen is for a dead sin to start a mental attitude reaction. You cannot afford a mental attitude reaction. You have then fallen into a reaction. Bitterness is a mental attitude sin. It is a sin which is dead. Out of bitterness, we have vindictiveness sprout up. Revenge tactics can be sins of the tongue or some action of revenge. You do not get in between God and discipline. There are two results—self-induced misery.

Εναυκλεω = *to be troubled on the inside, self-induced misery*. It keeps on producing scar tissue on the soul. Pseudo love. Apertures of the soul for the right man in a woman's soul. The apertures on the other side are to respond to God. When you have a soul coated in bitterness, then these parts of the soul are infected and stopped up.

Μαιαινω = *to be stained, corrupted, polluted*. Walking down a street and the streets are narrow. There is no system of sewage. A maid comes to the balcony off the 2nd or 3rd floor and chunks out the contents of the chamber pot and gets all over you and you are on the

way to a party in your best toga and you are the guest of honor and you will enter into the party last and you have your feet washed and perfume sprayed on you. You are μῆραιω-ed. Aorist tense. What is your μῆραιω? They are mental attitude sins; they stink. You make yourself miserable and all of those around you miserable. You ruin the party. How can anyone eat the soup? Who can sit next to you? This is how you go through the Christian way of life. You are μῆραιω-ed. Bob checked into one Christian who was fired, since he knew the boss, and the guy deserved it. Subjunctive means revenge tactics are possible but not definite. Potential.

Heb. 12:15 See to it that no one fails to obtain the grace of God; that no "root of bitterness" springs up and causes trouble, and by it many become defiled.

Now let's look at two doctrines to balance out this segment. Human good and morality.

Human good

1. Dead works in Heb. 6:1 Everything which comes from the old sin nature is repugnant to God; they are dead to Him and God's plan.
2. Isa. 64:6 our righteousnesses are as filthy rags.
3. 2Tim. 1:9 no place in the plan of God for human good.
4. Titus 3:5: human good will not save. Human good can be as simple as walking an aisle. Feeling sorry for your sins, joining a church, changing your behavior patterns.
5. The believer's human good is destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Christ. Human good is wood, hay and stubble; divine good is gold, silver and precious stones. God will have nothing to do with human good in eternity. It is all burned. It makes a big fire. Done in the filling of the Holy Spirit is rewarded; human good is destroyed.
6. Human good is removed because it has not place in the plan of God.
7. Human good is not the same as morality. Morality is the function of the entire human race.
8. Human good is the basis for the unbeliever's judgement at the last judgment. Only unbelievers are involved at the last judgment. John 3:36 old sin nature produces sins; area of weakness produces human good. A person rejects Christ as Savior stands on his human good. The basis of his indictment is human good; he is there because he did not believe in Jesus Christ. Sins have already been judged on the cross; these are the sins of believers and unbelievers. The books of works are opened. Take Charlie Brown. A hustler; a good old boy. He is at the last judgment. He is brought up. His name was in the book of life, but it was blotted out because he died without believing in Jesus Christ. However, in the book of works, he has done some good deeds. All of his good deeds add up to -R and -R cannot have fellowship with +R. If you have been at a party where believers are trying to be more spiritual or more esoteric than everyone else.

You need to relax. You might read the first point and get upset.

Morality

1. Christianity is not morality but a relationship to God through Christ. That is positional sanctification.
2. Morality is a by-product of Christianity.
3. However, morality has no dynamics. This should not be too difficult. Do you know someone who was all right and you were totally right and did you not love them? There is something about someone who is so right and you are so wrong that you cannot stand them. Morality is necessary in a society but morality has no dynamics.
4. The dynamics of Christianity is found in the filling of the Spirit. The filling of the Spirit technique. If I blew the whistle and said, believers, love each other, it would be the weirdest thing that you have ever seen. It would be phony and corny. Love is a relaxed mental attitude. You don't hate anyone; you are not jealous, you are not vindictive, you are not hostile. It is commanded to every believer. God says love all believers. He knows that we cannot do it on our own; but He gives us the Holy Spirit. This is a supernatural way of life. You can fake humility and be proud. That is not Christianity. Humility is a mental attitude and you can have it with poise and confidence. It is what is inside. *As a man thinks, so he is.*
5. Morality is absolutely necessary for the function of the human race. It is made up of believers and unbelievers. Morality is designed for both and without it, the human race cannot function or perpetuate itself. The new immorality has come, which means also a loss of freedom. We are undergoing changes which makes us look like the end of the Roman empire. Freedom is protected by morality. Divine institution #3 is the family and it is a training ground for morality. Divine institution #4 is nation—Potsdam and Yalta, we turned a third of the free world over to the slavery. The Hungarians called for help, and we ignored that. There is no morality in that. In Vietnam, no one has to die; we could clear this up overnight. Morality is not the Christian life, but a means to protect freedoms. The angelic conflict cannot reach its proper conclusion apart from morality in the human race. There are standards from God which can be executed by the believer and unbeliever.
6. Morality is for the entire human race. The unbeliever is able to be moral.
7. The filling of the Holy Spirit produces morality; and the function of the conscience in the area of divine law will produce morality.
8. Morality without spirituality has a tendency to produce self-righteousness, religion and hypocrisy (not always). Whitewashed tombstones describes this.
9. Morality perpetuates the human race to the conclusion of the angelic conflict.

2Sam. 11:12

Rebound Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #5

circa 3/11/69

Confess the sin, forget it, isolate it. Others may not forget a past sin, but that is their problem. Once you have confessed a sin, forget it.

Mental attitude sins put scar tissue on the soul and it puts you out of capacity for love, whether God's love or for the right woman. A woman who is promiscuous cannot respond to the right man. The only way to breathe off this scar tissue is Bible doctrine. Rebound is needed before that. The Holy Spirit cannot teach where He cannot control. Bible doctrine removes scar tissue from the left bank of the soul; and it protects you from scar tissue on the right bank.

Bible doctrine moves into the mentality of the soul, giving you a relaxed mental attitude. Bible doctrine moves into volition so that you make decisions which please God and you are willing to please God and you want to please God. You think you might be missing out, but Bible doctrine teaches you that you are not. Bible doctrine moves into the conscience of the soul, provides a new set of norms and standards.

There are two guardians of the woman's soul: Bible doctrine which acts as a protection for her. When a teenage girl wants to get into something bad, Bible doctrine protects her. In Houston, there is a movement to provide us with the same sex education as in California. That is sex encouragement there. Her self consciousness is smart enough to know that she is not ready for her right man. She is protected from promiscuity and Bible doctrine has given her norms and standards, which also act as a protector.

The rm is also the guardian of the soul. When the rm comes along, he protects her soul. And she responds to him in the mentality of her soul. Bible doctrine has developed her capacity and she has a fantastic mental attitude response to him. Day by day she does things to please him. Her norms and standards are fulfilled by this person. With the right man, a woman has double protection. Rebound is the basic principle by which the soul can learn doctrine. Our capacity for love depends upon Bible doctrine. Category 3, friends, can be dealt with on the basis of Bible doctrine.

Had David been living today and in a fundamental church, they would have said, "He is not really a believer" or "He had a head belief but not a heart belief." Any sin a believer can do, an unbeliever can do as well. The worst rats in this world tonight are believers and the nices people are believers in fellowship. All the unbelievers are somewhere in between. Just because a person is saved, that does not make them nice people. Christians can be the most underhanded people in the world; the idea is, just because a person is a Christian, he is not automatically nice. You can't just take that at face value.

Samuel apparent wrote Samuel?

Here, we have one of the greatest believers of all time. He's been a king for 17 years.

He studied and prayed early every morning. Psalm 5:2, 3 59:16 88:13 143:8 Some are day people and some are night people, so some could not manage this. David made this his quiet time. He loved God and he loved God more than anything else in the world. His daily devotions occurred at other times as well. During the other parts of the day he would spend time in the Word as well.

2Sam. 11::1: In the spring of the year, the time when kings go out to battle, David sent Joab, and his servants with him, and all Israel. And they ravaged the Ammonites and besieged Rabbah. But David remained at Jerusalem.

David should have gone out to battle, but he did not. He went on negative volition. He sent Joab, his chief of staff, and his servants. This was the year to fight the children of Ammon. It is God's will for him to be leading a campaign. He is out of the mental will of God.

2Sam. 11:2: It happened, late one afternoon, when David arose from his couch and was walking on the roof of the king's house, that he saw from the roof a woman bathing; and the woman was very beautiful.

Since it is early in the morning and David gets up here and notice, no doctrine; scar tissue begins to build; he has probably begun to have mental attitude sins. He is not rebounding. Mental attitude sins lead back to the area of weakness. Once you build up scar tissue on the left bank of the soul. Here is a mature believer and oriented to the grace of God and the plan of God. When you cut off doctrine, you begin to build scar tissue and you enter into pseudo love with God and then with people. He will enter into pseudo love with a woman who might be his right woman. If it had not been a woman, David would have entered into pseudo love with something else. Neglect of rebound leads to neglect of doctrine. Not a Chinaman's chance, which is a good phrase.

Rebound is important. David is a spiritual giant. No one in this room is like David; he was a man with capacity to love God. He had real category love for God. It is not like David to be out of God's will. Operationally, David ought to be at his command post. Joab ought to be writing orders for him, but Joab is giving orders.

In the ancient world, the gardens were built on the roofs. His castle would be higher than most. Maybe we could suggest that David not going to the beach where the girls are. You don't have to go to the beach where the girls are to have ideas. You can stand on the corner of Main and Lamar and commit mental adultery. You can always tell when people lack doctrine; they come up with taboos. Boys get ideas when women where something from their neck to their feet. It is unrealistic and stupid to prohibit men and women from swimming together. Bob grew on the beaches of Southern California. Only a person who is very stupid or very religious who would go in for a taboo against *mixed bathing*. David and Bathsheba are on different roofs, and she is naked, but David is married to several beautiful women. It is possible for a man to see a woman without clothes on and not get out of fellowship. The right relationship with a woman and you will not be taken down with another naked woman. A person without category 1 or 2 love will see a naked woman, and it is quite an experience.

When a man loves one woman and has the capacity to love this woman, then he does not need other women. He is impressed by this one woman. He is impressed, but erroneously impressed. Unbelievers can be faithful to one woman. They can go all over the world and

be tempted and they remain faithful. When your soul coalesces with one woman, then you don't need over women. It is about time you heard something which is honest, if you have not heard the truth from your pastor. Boy meets girl is here to stay. If you don't know the answers to these things, then your teenaged kids will be animals. If your child is normal, they will get wild unless they have norms and standards and doctrine in the soul.

What does not restrain is stirring messages from the pulpit. *Down with sex*. This doesn't work. God has a right woman for us and He protects each individual in that relationship. David sees a beautiful woman and the left bank of his soul is clogged up with scar tissue.

She was probably one of the most beautiful women in history. He should have been working on the siege of Rabbah, but he was making a siege of Bathsheba.

2Sam. 11:3–4: [And David sent and inquired about the woman. And one said, "Is not this Bathsheba, the daughter of Eliam, the wife of Uriah the Hittite?" So David sent messengers and took her, and she came to him, and he lay with her. \(Now she had been purifying herself from her uncleanness.\) Then she returned to her house.](#)

You have been taught that adultery is the worst sin in the world, but it is the mental attitude sins which are so monstrous and the sins of the tongue. You are simply shocked by adultery; yes, it is a sin, yes it is prohibited, and yes it is wrong.

It is possible that Bathsheba rebounded; that may be what the purification is all about. Now, 3 or 4 months go by.

2Sam. 11:5: [And the woman conceived, and she sent and told David, "I am pregnant."](#)

David has a problem and he will try to solve it his way.

2Sa 11:6–9: [So David sent word to Joab, "Send me Uriah the Hittite." And Joab sent Uriah to David. When Uriah came to him, David asked how Joab was doing and how the people were doing and how the war was going. Then David said to Uriah, "Go down to your house and wash your feet." And Uriah went out of the king's house, and there followed him a present from the king. But Uriah slept at the door of the king's house with all the servants of his lord, and did not go down to his house. When they told David, "Uriah did not go down to his house," David said to Uriah, "Have you not come from a journey? Why did you not go down to your house?" Uriah said to David, "The ark and Israel and Judah dwell in booths, and my lord Joab and the servants of my lord are camping in the open field. Shall I then go to my house, to eat and to drink and to lie with my wife? As you live, and as your soul lives, I will not do this thing."](#)

Uriah refused. A campaign lasted for several months. Having a relationship with his wife was often not done because his wife was not safe until the enemy was killed.

Uriah was killed; you can read the rest of the chapter.

2Sam. 11:27: And when the mourning was over, David sent and brought her to his house, and she became his wife and bore him a son. But the thing that David had done displeased the LORD.

David has refused to rebound. About a year goes by. He has a son, the son is 3 months old. Then, Nathan the prophet goes to David.

2Sam. 12:1–13: And the LORD sent Nathan to David. He came to him and said to him, "There were two men in a certain city, the one rich and the other poor. The rich man had very many flocks and herds, but the poor man had nothing but one little ewe lamb, which he had bought. And he brought it up, and it grew up with him and with his children. It used to eat of his morsel and drink from his cup and lie in his arms, and it was like a daughter to him. Now there came a traveler to the rich man, and he was unwilling to take one of his own flock or herd to prepare for the guest who had come to him, but he took the poor man's lamb and prepared it for the man who had come to him." Then David's anger was greatly kindled against the man, and he said to Nathan, "As the LORD lives, the man who has done this deserves to die, and he shall restore the lamb fourfold, because he did this thing, and because he had no pity." Nathan said to David, "You are the man! Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel, 'I anointed you king over Israel, and I delivered you out of the hand of Saul. And I gave you your master's house and your master's wives into your arms and gave you the house of Israel and of Judah. And if this were too little, I would add to you as much more. Why have you despised the word of the LORD, to do what is evil in his sight? You have struck down Uriah the Hittite with the sword and have taken his wife to be your wife and have killed him with the sword of the Ammonites. Now therefore the sword shall never depart from your house, because you have despised me and have taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be your wife.' Thus says the LORD, 'Behold, I will raise up evil against you out of your own house. And I will take your wives before your eyes and give them to your neighbor, and he shall lie with your wives in the sight of this sun. For you did it secretly, but I will do this thing before all Israel and before the sun.'" David said to Nathan, "I have sinned against the LORD." And Nathan said to David, "The LORD also has put away your sin; you shall not die.

David had neglected the rebound technique. David said that the man ought to repay 4-fold. He condemned himself and he had to pay 4-fold for his sin. David has gone over a year without rebound. David is in a major carnal position and he is qualified for the sin unto death. It took at least 20 years for David to pay for this sin.

4-Fold Curse

1. David should have died; the child died for him. Either the parents of the child would die.
2. 2Sam 13:1–22 tells us how one of David's sons raped one of his daughters.
3. 2Sam 13:23–29: one of David's sons killed another son, as David killed Uriah.
4. The line through Bathsheba is not where Jesus will be born. At Coniah, the line will no longer rule. The line through Nathan would rule.

Nathan gives David his sin by analogy only. When Nathan says, "You are the man!" Then God, through Nathan, speaks to David and all of the gracious things which God has given Nathan.

Psalm 38 for how David feels right now.

Psalm 38:1–8: A Psalm of David, for the memorial offering. O LORD, rebuke me not in your anger, nor discipline me in your wrath! For your arrows have sunk into me, and your hand has come down on me. There is no soundness in my flesh because of your indignation; there is no health in my bones because of my sin. For my iniquities have gone over my head; like a heavy burden, they are too heavy for me. My wounds stink and fester because of my foolishness, I am utterly bowed down and prostrate; all the day I go about mourning. For my sides are filled with burning, and there is no soundness in my flesh. I am feeble and crushed; I groan because of the tumult of my heart.

David is having trouble with his cardio vascular system. Stress has affected his health. He lacks category 3 love, probably because of what he did to Uriah, who was a man with great personal integrity.

Psalm 38:9–22: O Lord, all my longing is before you; my sighing is not hidden from you. My heart throbs; my strength fails me, and the light of my eyes--it also has gone from me. My friends and companions stand aloof from my plague, and my nearest kin stand far off. Those who seek my life lay their snares; those who seek my hurt speak of ruin and meditate treachery all day long. But I am like a deaf man; I do not hear, like a mute man who does not open his mouth. I have become like a man who does not hear, and in whose mouth are no rebukes. But for you, O LORD, do I wait; it is you, O Lord my God, who will answer. For I said, "Only let them not rejoice over me, who boast against me when my foot slips!" For I am ready to fall, and my pain is ever before me. I confess my iniquity; I am sorry for my sin. But my foes are vigorous, they are mighty, and many are those who hate me wrongfully. Those who render me evil for good accuse me because I follow after good. Do not forsake me, O LORD! O my God, be not far from me! Make haste to help me, O Lord, my salvation!

When a man goes out and sleeps with whoever they can, they lose their own capacity for love. For a teenager, it does not pay...it is not good for a man or a woman to be promiscuous. A man gets it right in the neck for promiscuity.

Solomon was ruined by promiscuity. Paul is the greatest believer on this earth and he was under the law of supreme sacrifice. He had category 1 and 3 love. He did not have these other traps. He probably had a more intense relationship with God. He declared that he was normal, but his capacity for service was increased because God and Bible doctrine took up the slack for his lack of a wife. He is a living memorial to the fact that, when doctrine is #1, then it is easy to enjoy life.

Teenagers get into jams. A young girl needs to know that God has a rm for her and that he may be 5 or 7 or 10 years away. A young man may date, but he guards the soul of the

woman who he is with. An animal does not do that. He calls the girl names if he doesn't get what he wants and he always gets his comeuppance.

Bob is spelling this out for us. We have in our lap the English of 300 years ago, and we don't always get the gist of what is being taught. Whether we like it or not, we are going to get in in plain language.

The teenage boy or girl are aroused and want to go through with it; but they need doctrine in their souls to overcome the temptation. If you have a teen for a child and you still have to follow them everywhere, then you have screwed up. It is the scar tissue on the soul which ruins the young person. If doctrine is to you what breathing is, then you will have the capacity for category 1 love. Doctrine in your soul with category 1 love will help you to hold out for your rm or rw.

David says he is ready to halt. His sorrow was continually before him and he was very unhappy. He has every detail of life except health. "I will declare my iniquity."

Qal imperfect of $\tau\lambda\lambda$ means that he is concerned about his sin.

David says to Nathan, "I have sinned against the Lord." This is another reason why this public confession stuff is no good. When you sin, it is against God. David confesses his sin and he uses rebound and Nathan tells him that he will live. He will live for 23 more years.

Psalms 51 is one of the Bathsheba psalms.

Psalms 51:3: *For I know my transgressions, and my sin is ever before me. Against you, you only, have I sinned and done what is evil in your sight, so that you may be justified in your words and blameless in your judgment.*

You do not put your sincerity above the grace of God. Or doing penance? If there was a system of penance, I'd tell you all about it. A Bathsheba operation, and \$1000 to tapes and pubs. If there was a system of penance in the Bible, I'd level with you. However, on the basis of the grace of God, it is not there. You don't have to come trotting to you with some apology; you sin against God. Let God turn cursing into blessing.

God gets the glory in rebound. God gets the credit. God turns cursing into blessing. God can do this. God gets the glory. Let God

3 psalms on operation Bathsheba. *When I kept silence, when I did not confess, my bones waxed old; for day and night, Your hand was upon me. I had night sweats. I acknowledge my sin to You and my iniquity I have not hid, and my transgressions to You; and You forgave the sins.* Selah is a musical term; and it means the choir stops and the instruments play. It gives you time to think about it.

David lived about 1000 B.C. and 3000 years later, the same principle applies.

Gen. 3:12 Systems of Perception Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #6 3/19/69

Whether you like it or not, God exists. We need knowledge of God, knowledge of man and knowledge of the plan of God for man. The outline for the next few weeks: Know God, know man and know God's plan.

Systems of perception. No matter how smart or stupid you are, if you are 1 degree above an idiot, you must use one of 3 systems of perception: empiricism, which is the scientific method. It is a system of perception through observation and experimentation. You learn things by observations or by means of one of the other senses. Aristotle made this famous in his system of thinking.

A θεος = *atheistic*. Α γνωσις = *agnostic*. The first system makes little sense.

The second system is known as rationalism. It is a system of perception through reason alone. Reason sets up its own vocabulary and is independent of any observation. The vocabulary of the mind; the categories of the mind. Aristotle, as an empiricist, tried to begin his philosophy with God. He gave it a title, *the unmoved mover*, which is a brilliant title for one using empiricism; but it is inadequate. You cannot do it by rationalism either. Descartes probably accomplished the closest proof of God. He wanted to somehow get to the absolute, and he worked on this for an extensive period of time; and he finally said, "I think; therefore, I exist." The Cartesian principle.

All humans begin with the perception of faith. Everyone begins everything on faith. Bob actually believed what he was told $1 + 1 = 2$. With a different base, $1+1$ is something else. When we start out, we accept things as facts. We learn subtraction after addition; etc.

You begin by learning language. The Hebrew word is neshemah; and when God breathes into you, you have a soul. No one learns a vocabulary apart from faith. Then these words are classified. Then you begin to think in terms of sentences and then in terms of paragraphs.

No one jumps right into rationalism or empiricism. Faith is the basic system of perception for everything. A person reaches God consciousness for the first time; but you cannot point to something like God and say, "That's God." There comes a time when everyone reaches God consciousness. Everything that we learn about God, we learn after salvation.

With the spiritual birth, you begin all over again. Now, you may use empiricism to observe some things or you may use rationalism to put things together.

Perceptive Principle of Faith

1. Faith is a system of perception which accepts an established criterion as the basis of reality. For us, it will be the Bible. Different words for faith in the Bible. Yachal is when you depend upon systems of doctrine and promises of God during a pressure period. Kawah means being identified with something stronger than

yourself, upon which you can depend. It is weaving a thread into a rope, which cannot be snapped, although the thread itself can be snapped.

2. This established criterion is outside the capabilities of the individual, thus making faith outside the other systems of perception.
3. Faith is tantamount to trusting the authority of another or another thing.
4. Believe is a transitive verb; the real merit is in the object. Under salvation, we have, **whoever believes in Christ**. It has a subject and it has an object. The merit is in the object. The believer in time believes in promises, in the Word, doctrines from the word; and the merit is in the promise. The principle and the one who operates on these principles. You are dealing with faith as a non-meritorious system of perception. Phase I: you believe in Jesus Christ; your faith is in Him. Phase II: believer in time. This is a lifetime of believing in promises and doctrines. Phase III: believer in eternity. Absent from the body and face to face with the Lord. The perceptive abilities of the soul operate apart from faith. Faith is necessary here. It is a principle of operation. Faith not used in eternity because of other systems of perception taking over at that point.
5. Faith is the only system of perception which is compatible with the principle of grace. Faith is the only system of perception which is compatible with grace. The old sin nature has an area of weakness which produces sins; and an area of strength which produces human good. In one lifetime, every person commits x number of sins; all of these sins are poured out on Jesus Christ. Grace says there is a way of being saved based on the work of God. Grace is simple: Grace = God doing the work and man receives what God provides. Under religion or legalism, man gets the credit; man does the doing and God is supposed to like it and reward it. There is no place for human good in salvation or in the Christian way of life.
6. Faith is the only system of perception which is common to all members of the human race. The perceptive system of faith. It is common to all normal members of the human race. Idiots do not have the perceptive ability of faith.
7. Faith is the only means of appropriating salvation.

The issue of God consciousness comes before faith. A person, through the mentality of the soul, becomes aware of the existence of God. John 7:17 Jer. 23:13 God will provide the gospel for those who reach God consciousness and are positive toward God. Everyone reaches God consciousness between ages 4 and 20.

5 Ways to Reach God Consciousness

1. God exists because universally man believes that He exists. Parents talk about God and the child wonders what is this. The child does not see God; the parents do not see God; and there is a discussion, and in this way, God consciousness can be sparked.
2. Anthropological system. A person has norms and standards and sometimes he has an urge to do right instead of wrong. The structure of society and the function of human government so develops the consciousness of the human soul; and from this system of thinking, one comes to God consciousness.

3. Ontological means the human mind possesses the idea of a perfect or absolute being, so such a being must exist. This is rationalism.
4. Teleological: Rom. 1:20–21: the structure of the world demands a designer. This is empiricism. We may study a snowflake through a microscope and become aware of design in that way; or the structure of bodies in space; or you may examine electrons or bacteria, and decide a designer is needed.
5. A cosmological approach: the intuitive law of cause and effect. A perceptive system based on the first cause. What is behind this? Well, what is behind that? And, eventually, you get back to God. Parents often squash this development of rationalism. We sometimes do that. Eventually, they ask, “Well, then, Who is God?”

This is simply becoming aware of God’s existence. There is a response or a reaction with + or – poles. Positive volition is a desire to know God and a desire to have a relationship with God. Bob recalls having some norms and standards in school; and some gal who didn’t; and she went off with a friend of his. And Bob began to think about God. If women are going to be so fickle, how would God be as a friend. As a kid, Bob thought about having God being his friend. He can recall looking up in the sky and thinking about God; wonder what He is doing up there? Does He know I am here? If you go on positive signals, you will stay alive until gospel hearing.

Others throw up negative signals at God consciousness. Positive signals and gospel hearing can end up with faith in Christ. You positive or negative volition at God consciousness is as far as you can go with it. God picks it up from there.

An equation. At MIT Bob lectured for 8 hours a day. He taught doctrine there in one week. They would concentrate for 3 hours at a time. Charlie Clough was one of the people there. He answered a lot of questions. He had concentration the whole time. They were quick in their perspicacity; so Bob began to use equations with them.

$F1+S2 + FNM = \text{salvation}$ The Father sends the Son, and non-meritorious faith gives salvation. $S2+HS3+\text{Confession} = \text{Spirituality}$. $RB - OSN = \text{plan of God or OG (operation grace)}$.

John 1:5: **In Him is light; in Him is no darkness.** Bob explains color, and what is absorbed and what is reflected. This is the essence of color and this is analogous to the fact that God has essence. He has volition; He has +R. He is justice. $R+J = \text{the holiness of God}$. God is eternal life; no beginning and no end. He is omnipotent. His knowledge is not related to time. He is omnipresent; He is immutable; He cannot change His character.

Billions of years ago, God made a decision to save man; God is perfect righteousness and perfect justice; and He loves man, but He must be consistent with His J and R.

We have are first idea about God. He has certain characteristics. We know his pesons, using language of accommodation for Father, Son and the Holy Spirit. God is justice,

sovereignty, righteousness, omnipotent, omnipresent, omniscient. All members of the Trinity have this essence.

Either controlled by the old sin nature or by the Holy Spirit. Grieve not the Spirit, quench not the Spirit. Let's look at man as He came from the hand of God. He was created to resolve the angelic conflict.

Barah = Gen. 1:27 God has +R and man has moral reasoning power; the key word is *I ought*. God has sovereignty, man has volition: *I will*. This is an image of principle. Man and God both have essence. God has self-consciousness and sovereignty. Man also has immaterial essence. The body is just a house, but we have real essence. Bana and yatsar

Man was created a trichotomos being. Isa. 43:7. One verse where all 3 verbs are used. Everyone it is called by My Name, I have created him for my glory; I have formed him; and I have made him (asah). A body, a soul and a spirit.

Gen. 3: "You will not die." The serpent attacks the woman and not the man. Satan implied that God was unfair. Aren't you concerned that God is not allowing you to be as smart as Him? The whole concept behind this was, the woman was not interested in doctrine, and she was not. "You will not die, for He knows that in the day that you eat of it, you will be like God." This is the beginning of the introduction to the mental attitude sin pride, knowing good and evil. When the woman saw the tree, and noticed it was good for food, and pleasant to the eye, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and she ate. Her spirit dies and she picks up the old sin nature. Now Adam faces the great crisis. She gave him the fruit and he ate. His human spirit died and he picked up an old sin nature. He knew what he was doing, but she did not. The eyes of them both were opened. And they knew they were naked. This was a terrible condition, not to be tolerated; the first social problem in history. They did something; it did not occur to them to ask God about it. They figured, if they are right with each other, that is good enough.

Operation grace. They heard the voice of Jehovah Elohim walking in the garden in the cool of the day. They have sin natures and they can only hide from God. They do not want God to see what they have done, which is operation fig leaves. They know this won't cut it. They run and hide behind the trees. The sin nature is capable of hiding from God. You must know man and in knowing man, you have to recognize something. When you get into religion, you are hiding from God. Man had been given responsibility, and he failed. "Why are you where you are?" God asked. And he said, "I heard your voice in the garden and I was afraid, because I was naked and I hid myself." Then Jesus asks him, "Did you eat of the tree?" "It is your fault, God; You gave me the woman and she made me eat." Operation patsy.

The serpent would then move on his belly.

Gen. 3:14–15: The LORD God said to the serpent, "Because you have done this, cursed are you above all livestock and above all beasts of the field; on your belly you shall go, and dust you shall eat all the days of your life. I will put enmity between you and the woman, and

between your offspring and her offspring; he shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise his heel."

You, Satan, will bruise His heel" which is the cross.

Eventually, both accept Christ as Savior, and Adam calls the woman Eve, which means *living*. They simply pulled some leaves off the trees. However, God gave them animal skins, which means that an animal died in order to clothe them. This is a picture of receiving the righteousness of God at salvation.

Metamorphisms next time.

1Tim. 2:9 Metamorphisms Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #7 circa 3/26/69

Going into the principle of metamorphisms. Anytime that you start with women, it takes awhile before you actually get to the subject. There was a time, and Bob shudders to think about it, that the role of child-bearer could have been assigned to the man.

Women should be adorned with inner beauty and with a stabilized mental attitude. What should every woman who is a believer wear? She should wear an relaxed mental attitude; she should have stability of mind. The first two words refer to what makes a woman beautiful. It is not what she wears on the outside, although, sometimes it helps. Bob hates the miniskirt. He does not like the knee exposed. But the issue is, what goes on, on the inside. A lot of people think that Christian women must comply with certain standards according to what some preachers think. Bob has no problem with a woman wearing slacks. What a woman wears should not be legislated or bullied from the pulpit. If Bob spots anyone telling someone how to dress, he's going to send them out. Bob likes the skirt hitting right below the knee; should he stand up and preach a sermon about it? Of course not. If you don't like how someone is dressed, then that is up to them. If someone wants to come in a barrel, that is fine.

This passage sounds like it might contradict what Bob is saying. If you are wearing this or that, then everything should be well-arranged; coordinated. No matter how rich or poor you are, you do not have to act as if you just stepped out of a rag barrel.

There is no such thing as an ugly Christian woman; all she has to do is have a good mental attitude. The secret of beauty is in the soul. Beauty is in the mind; beauty is what you think. The Bible constantly concentrates on the inner beauty. By means of good works; associated with good works.

1Tim. 2:9 ...likewise also that women should adorn themselves in respectable apparel, with well-arranged [Bob says it is not *modesty*] and stability of mental attitude [or, self-control], not with braided hair and gold or pearls or costly attire,

1Tim. 2:15b ...--if they continue in faith and love and holiness, with self-control.

In between these verses is what we are after; a parenthesis. How will you learn doctrine? Two things are necessary: silence (which indicates concentration). This is a passage about women, but it applies to women as well. Secondly, you must accept authority if you are going to learn.

More people on Westheimer means that more authority is necessary. Subjection means willingness to be taught. A mental attitude is required. Silence is a mental attitude. Authority is a mental attitude. You must accept the authority of the teacher.

If the woman concentrates, then the man will play right along. This verse is found in the book of Timothy and the women at his church were bullying him. Later, Paul tells Timothy to drink some wine for his stomach's sake.

There are two things which keep a woman from being a monster. With the rm, ,she can be turned from a female to a glorious responder because this is what a woman is designed to do; the woman is designed to respond to a man. There must be the meeting of the souls first. When the husband is henpecked and pushed around, then that is one very frustrated female who probably has no ability to even enjoy category 3 love. Here, silence means concentration on her right man.

The woman completes the man. She comes back to him as the rib that was taken away, and she completes him. In the sin, the man knew exactly what he was doing; the woman did not.

1Ti 2:10–15a ...but with what is proper for women who profess godliness--with good works. Let a woman learn quietly with all submissiveness. I do not permit a woman to teach or to exercise authority over a man; rather, she is to remain quiet. For Adam was formed first, then Eve; and Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived and became a transgressor. Yet she will be saved through childbearing--if they continue in faith and love and holiness, with self-control.

The woman was deceived. She was spiritually dead. She offered the fruit to Adam and Adam understood the choice, which he made, and he fell, fully cognizant of what he was doing. The woman was deceived and Adam was not deceived.

Sex was designed to make the man and the woman one; for recreation; it was designed for blessing, but not originally for procreation. However, after sinning, sex would involve pain for the woman.

First, the man was changed out of phase with God as a sin-bearer. Because of the change in the woman, there must needs be a change in God the Son. Christ was born sinless. Man became a sinner; the woman became a child-bearer; God the Son became our sin bearer.

God the Father will do the judging. What He takes away is the law against us. Party of the first part and party of the second part are God and man. Man is reconciled by the cross.

The Levi was the specialized priesthood; they stood up all day long, sacrificing lamb after lamb. These sacrifices could not take away sin; they taught salvation.

Man is innocent and becomes a sinner; women becomes a child bearer; Christ becomes the God-man so that He can go to the cross. The final metamorphism: man believes in Jesus Christ and becomes a new creature in Christ.

Heb. 10:5–7: **Consequently, when Christ came into the world, he said, "Sacrifices and offerings you have not desired, but a body have you prepared for me; in burnt offerings and sin offerings you have taken no pleasure. Then I said, 'Behold, I have come to do your will, O God, as it is written of me in the scroll of the book.'"**

You may think that you are so good that God is just going to let you in, like these door sensors; and the doors fly open. And a lot of people think that they are good enough to walk right through. Raising your hand, walking down an aisle and weeping great tears of repentance won't do the trick either. There is no system of works whereby you can work your way into heaven.

The penalty of sin is removed by expiation; propitiation handles the problem of the character of God; relative righteousness is solved by imputation and justification.

We are born into the slave market of sin. Whoever does the buying must be a man on the outside. He must be on the outside before Adam fell; or possess the nature of Adam before he fell. We are all born into the slave market of sin and we can only get out through the door of the cross. We get out free by believing in Jesus Christ; Christ purchased our freedom at the cross. Expiation; there is a penalty on sin called spiritual death. Christ paid spiritual death on the cross; Christ paid for our sins on the cross. **He who knew no sin was made sin for us.**

The problem of birth is removed by regeneration. We are said to be born again. 1Peter 1:23 Titus 3:5. The problem of physical death is solved. Regeneration; we are born again.

The problem of the character of God. We have righteousness imputed to us; justification. On one side there is debit. We need the removal of sins; eternal life, and righteousness equivalent to God's righteousness. We do not have the assets to meet our million dollar indebtedness. God not only wipes out the debt which is against us, but He imputes to us His righteousness. On the debit side we are sinners and we have spiritual death. He looks at this +R and says *vindicated*. 2Cor. 5:21. We must have His life; and He has given us His life. He also gives to us His life. Philip. 3:9 Rom. 5:1 Titus 3:7 justification.

Propitiation. God is sovereign, righteous, justice, love and eternal life. God loves man, but His love is hindered because man is a sinner. Grace means that God will provide for us that which we cannot provide for ourselves: propitiation. He bore our sins, which satisfied the justice of God. He is free to love us and He is still consistent with His own character.

God has given us eternal life, so that we can live with Him forever. Everything is provided for us by the cross. We may have every reason in the world to understand why God should not love us. We may know that no one cares for us; we might have so many mental attitude sins that it is like the skunk smell. Soul-odor. Therefore, no one really cares for you. However, all

of these things were handled at the cross, so that God is able to love us with a maximum amount of love. God loves us right now because we are past the point of propitiation. So, if God loves us with a maximum of love right now, then we should understand that His plan for our life is perfect. God is a gentleman. He waits in grace to provide us with the things that we need.

Gen. 15:12 faith rest Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #8 circa 4/2/69

Gen. 14 is a chapter of victory; and Gen. 15 is one of defeat. Abraham could have said, "I told you so" several times during this chapter, but he chose not to. He attacked a large force (100,000–200,000) with about 275 men. It was a night attack; the first on record. When he recovered the tremendous spoils of the cities of the plains, he refused personally to take any of the spoils. He had attained a state of growth where he was not concerned about enriching himself. He did reimburse some of his men. This is a victory over self righteousness.

A team in football may go for 7 straight wins, and then they fail to attain the objectives of practice and get wiped out on the next game. A highly successful team can be very susceptible to defeat. Satan is a great counter puncher and worry is something which apparently will strike Abraham.

Abram must face the fact of the return of Cedarlaomer. He refused the proposition of the king of Sodom; and has turned down millions of dollars worth of spoil. Abram is concerned that he is not sure where he will find enough with which to retire; and he has not an heir, even though God has promised him an heir from his own loins.

Abram is in panic palace; he is upset; he is disburbed; we will trace his failure so we can see how he applies the faith rest technique.

Billions of years ago, God knew every problem that we would face and He made provision for them way back then. He reveals His solutions to us either in His promises or in the Word. We go on positive volition toward God; He is in the problem solving business.

The Holy Spirit stores in the human spirit certain doctrines which we can apply under certain conditions. In the mentality of the soul, we have an relaxed mental attitude. Most of us have some sort of a closet and in this closet hangs our threads. They are paid for or are being paid for, and we call them ours. We wear them; no one else wants them. These are the only clothes that we wear. On one hanger is a coat. You don't wear someone else's. You only wear what is in your own closet.

Every time we have suffering and problems, we can go positive and use faith rest; or we can go negative, and use our own solutions. Who is more capable of solving our problems? God only handles problem solving through a technique called faith rest. Once we believe in Jesus Christ, there are certain techniques by which we function; the sop of the Christian life. (1) faith rest, (2) rebound; (3) spirituality; (4) living in the Word. Every time we face a problem, we either let God handle it or we handle it. God does not handle our problems unless our volition is involved.

Bob once walked out his back door and he had a towel draped around him, and the door locked and there he was. When in a jam like that, you just act like it is normal. That may or may not get the job done.

Hell week in the university. There are always a certain number of figures creeping through town, from bush to bush, and they had been dropped off without their clothes, and they were given 2 hours to get back to the frat house.

This is how we are as believers when we are caught without doctrine and without promises to claim. We will get a promise for the situation. First, Abram is told, "Fear not." Deut. 31:6, 8 Philip. 4:5–7. We are only told to be afraid if we do not use the faith rest technique.

["I am your shield and I am your great reward."](#) When the Lord is your shield and our reward, then there is only one thing we can do: have faith in God. If he falls apart, he will be disbursed. The same issue is one that we have to face. We ought to have a promise notebook, at least when we start out. Every believer ought to have a promise notebook. Sometimes today we have faced the charge of the mosquito; or maybe even, the charge of the elephant. If this is true, then answer the question (to God). You answer it silently. No nudging; no elbowing. How many promises have you claimed today?

Matt. 21:22 is a basic prayer promise; there are some things for which we cannot or do not pray. There are equivalents there. If it bothers you or frightens you, Deut. 6:8 Psalm 37:4–5 1thess. 5:18 can be used no matter how bad things get.

Abram is still worried; he is concerned about having no heir. "Lord, I go childless." He wanted a child. He didn't live in this century. He wanted lots of kids. One of the rarest things Bob has collected; like women with marital problems who think they can solve things by having more kids. Everyone has his druthers; Abram wants a child, one from his own loins. Everyone wants something—a car, new clothes, a new house, etc. And all of this time, God is pouring out His grace upon us.

Abram has nothing to fear. God would protect him from all problems. When a crisis came, Abram became an army. He was always militarily prepared.

"I am your security." You do not have to worry about the future; you do not have to worry about retirement. He complains about a hopeless situation. Abram thinks that this Eleazar of Damascus will be his heir.

“Behold You have given me no seed.” It is all your fault, God. The woman You have given me; that is who caused me to sin. That is operation patsy, which is a definite sign of spiritual disorientation. A mature person is a person who can take responsibility for his own decisions and his own actions without blaming the whole human race.

Or you blame it on your environment or get a psychiatrist to find something to blame; or, in great desperation, just blame God.

There is a direct promise to Abram; he is childless and God promises him he will have a child. It will happen in 15 years. He will enjoy 15 years of peace. Faith rest is the verb *to believe* and the object this time is a promise. When he does this, he is relaxed.

God takes Abram out of his tent, and God says, “Look at the stars and so will your seed be.” There are trillions of celestial bodies in the sky. God created them and God eh Son provides a traffic pattern for them. When God makes a promise, we have to realize that a promise is not stronger than the person who makes the promise. In the case of the Word of God, all promises are made by God and reflect His character and His essence. God has made millions of promises and some are recorded in the Bible to be used by hundreds of generations. God has never failed to fulfill a promise yet. “Am I going to believe those promises or not?”

Abram has been saved for 50 years or more. Abraham had believed in the Lord and He God credited it to him as righteousness. Before Abram was 25, he lived in Ur of the Chaldees. God delivered Abraham from the big thing—from eternal spiritual death. On the other side of the cross, we are children. If God can save you, then quite obviously, he can handle any of your problems. It all depends upon God and no on us.

“And He said to him, ‘I am the Lord who led you out of the Chaldees.’” Abram was in Haran, the dried up place, and then Canaan. Abram failed several times in the 30 or so years in the land, God was always faithful. God is faithful to us all the time, no matter what. It is stupid to say, “If I am faithless, then God will not be faithful to me.” You cannot superimpose human characteristics on God. God’s faithfulness is a part of His grace; always.

Gen 15:8–10: [And he said, Lord God, by what shall I know that I shall inherit it? And He said to him, Take Me a heifer of three years old, and a she-goat of three years old, and a ram of three years old, and a turtledove, and a young pigeon. And he took all these to himself, and divided them in the middle, and laid each piece against one another; but he did not divide the birds.](#)

All the birds together speak of the hypostatic union. There is rebound, reconciliation and . Rebound, we name a sin, and we are cleansed from all unrighteousness. The heifer speaks of the principle of naming your sins. Reconciliation is the she-goat; God and man on the opposite of the barrier. Problem of relative righteousness, position in Adam, temporal life, sin, penalty of sin. The 3rd is propitiation.

God can love us and be consistent with His holiness. At the point of propitiation, we believe in Jesus Christ, and He is free to love us and give us eternal life because we are in line with His perfect righteousness. All of these things are completed as the God man.

The fowls come down on these sacrifices and Abram drives them away. These are emissaries of Satan, as we see in Matt. 13. Worry and anxiety and fear all keep the believer from trusting in God.

Because Abram is in perfect peace, he is now able to have a deep sleep. He has an relaxed mental attitude. Once he goes to sleep, his subconscious has a problem. This comes up and he has a nightmare. Once the conscious mind is free from anxiety, then the subconscious mind comes up. This accounts for the nightmare. [A horror of great darkness](#). This is a place where there are problems you are facing today, and you don't think about them until later. Past worries and past problems never solved. Now that everything is clear, there is a vacuum which has been created. Abram wakes up and has a nightmare.

A night ride on a stallion is difficult and stallions have all kinds of problems in formation. Mares are okay with it. His subconscious empties into his mind and he is falling apart again. He has an answer. Know of assurity. "Knowing, you will know" which means to *know with confidence*. The doctrine he will receive will cover his problems. Abram has a fear of death and God is going to give him dying grace. You'll live to a good peace. In the 4th generation, they will return here again. Preservation of a nation depends upon doctrine. Levi to Moses is 4 generations? This causes problems with the number of Israelites in Egypt.

Gen 15:17 [And it happened, the sun went down, and it was dark and behold, a smoking furnace, and a burning lamp passed between those pieces.](#)

These smudge pots are to keep the trees from freezing. Abram, are you a smudge pot or a burning light?

How does faith develop? When we believe in Jesus Christ, we have the amount of faith which is found in a grain of mustard seed. This faith has to grow, and it grows in several ways. Rom. 10:17 our faith develops by taking in the Word of God. Then we exercise our faith, which is Heb. 4:1–3. Then, as we begin to exercise, the filling of the Holy Spirit produces faith. Fruit of the Spirit. Up to this point, you are dealing with the charge of the mosquito. Then the charge of the elephant. 1Peter 1:7–8: [...so that the trial of your faith \(being much more precious than that of gold that perishes, but being proven through fire\) might be found to praise and honor and glory at the revelation of Jesus Christ, whom having not seen, you love; in whom not yet seeing, but believing in Him you exult with unspeakable joy, and having been glorified,...](#) The charge of the elephant is met by great inner happiness.

Dallas Hyde has been in the news a lot as of late. It is wonderful to know that there are still young men who are willing to fight for this country and to kill. There are those in this new generation who think they can just stop war. They are not prepared to do anything for this country. The main problem is we have a mealy mouth group of parents and in the high schools we have the worst set of Americans that we have ever had. No concept of strength or courage. If they do not get straightened out, they say they will not fight and they will not go. In Thieme's generation, they destroyed the enemy and they came to us asking where do we sign?

Abraham has just fought to preserve his nephew and family and he delivered them with 217 making a night attack. Refused to make a deal with the King of Sodom. But what really disturbed him is, he did not have a son from his own loins.

Behold, you have given me no seed. One born of my house is my only. God has never failed to keep a promise. Abram has been given specific promises. The nation they will serve will be Egypt, in v. 13 is Egypt for 400 years. [They will afflict them 400 years.](#)

Bob had a marvelous time in college with great social life. The academics were good too and a wonderful childhood. He became accustomed in the military to telling someone what to do and they just did it. Bob is 51 at this time. Bible doctrine makes a fantastic difference. How long we live is not important. God has a right time for everyone. We can never say, "What a terrible tragedy" when someone dies too young. God has a perfect time for us to check out. Until it is time to check out, we have Bible doctrine. Abram is told that he will die in peace.

Gen 15:15 [And you shall go to your fathers in peace. You shall be buried in a good old age.](#)

Abram had a lot of promises, the most important of which is, he would have a son. There were national and personal promises as well.

Going to Job 5 is an excellent passage for our nation.

Job 5:19–20: [He will deliver you in six troubles; yea, in seven no evil shall touch you. In famine He shall redeem you from death; and in war from the power of the sword.](#) God will deliver us in a depression and during a war. If God has a purpose for born again believers, He will deliver us.

4 categories: economic, military, social and dying disaster.

Job 5:21–22: [You shall be hidden from the whip of the tongue; neither shall you be afraid of robbery when it comes. At destruction \[death\] and famine you shall laugh; neither shall you be afraid of the beasts of the earth.](#) These are social attacks and dying grace.

Laughing reveals a relaxed mental attitude. Today, we might say, "You will be delivered from the automobiles." We register autos, so now it is time to haul them all in. When there

are x number of cars and x number of streets not designed to hold this many cars; so many people in a hurry, so many on a toot, so many who are angry. There is just no way to avoid it. This is a promise. We will face all sorts of death and we do not have to be frightened.

We see over and over again, *you will know*.

Job 5:23–25: *For you shall be in covenant with the stones of the field; and the beasts of the field shall be at peace with you. And you shall know that your tent is in peace; and you shall visit your fold, and shall miss nothing. And you shall know that your seed will be numerous, and your offspring as the grass of the earth.* This keeps you from being morbid about loved ones dying. Bob knows those who died during WWII, but we are not morbid about these things. We go on living. We do not allow the death of a loved one stop us from living.

Faith rest is designed to give you inner happiness and inner peace; your loved ones may die instantly maybe over a period of time. We miss and remember those we have lost. We keep on living a normal live. God has designed the Christian life to be a normal life.

We can be assured that our offspring will be great.

Job 5:26–27: *You shall come to your grave in a full age, like a shock of grain comes in its season. Behold this: we have searched it; it is so. Hear it and know for yourself.*

Full age means at a right time. When we accept Jesus Christ, God gives us so many days, a day at a time. Every day that we wake up, we have another day. There will be a time when He takes us home. When He takes us home, it is the right time; it is the perfect time. He knows exactly when to take us home. People have their phobias and their choices. Most want to go to sleep and not wake up, but that sounds dull to Bob. The minute you depart is the absolute right time. There could not be a better time. Suppose there was a time to die; who should have the say, you or God? Let's say God said, take your choice, and you choose 175 years. And after 75 years, you'll be a museum piece.

If Bob figured how he would die, he would have sworn it would have been in a plane crash. He felt bad once, in Oklahoma City, but he doesn't feel bad now. God knows. The Word of God has a lot of information about dying. God handles this situation, so we don't really have to worry much about it. Why have a preference if God has already figured it all out? Why get worried about it or cry or bite your nails? He can cross death off the list, leaving only taxes.

God has provided promises for us for living and dying and He has provided everything that we need, and every time that we are worried or upset, we are blaspheming. When you think fear and death and security frighten you, then you blaspheme God. "Just who told you to worry or to be disturbed?" You can't grow tall by worrying or thinking about it. We'd be a race of giants. Worrying is the antithesis of the faith rest technique. All the categories of disaster are covered here.

Bob noticed that some came in despondent, down in the mouth. This indicates that you are not familiar with faith rest or you are not using it. There are 7000 promises in the Word of God. You can move in any direction and you will run right into a promise. There are a lot of things in cosmos diabolicus set to worry us; increased drug use; increased alcohol use; the frantic type of social life; all of these things add up to trying to avoid reality. We have more of the 4 psychotics than ever before. Walk downtown on Main St. you cannot help but notice all the psychotics, without even being a psychologist.

Our system for the news has become a fantastic monster and they are interpreting the news in their liberal views. 200 years ago, your grandchildren would hear about it in history books for the first time. So we are constantly being bombarded with bad news. As never before, we need to Word of God. We are getting more and more bad news about the devil's world. They lived in a very stabilized society in England where doctrine was taught regularly all over the place. So we need the faith rest principle as never before.

The shock of corn is harvested at the right time. There is a right time and a wrong time to pick the corn. It has to be picked at the right time to be sweet, soft and nutritious. We are not supposed to tamper with this timing. This is why we do not tamper with God's plan by suicide. You will have a wonderful life, even if you faith rest all the way to your death bed. You do not need to be concerned about situations.

We have searched and examined this, and we have learned it and we know it.

Now back to Abram. A generation back then was 100 years without the science that we have today. In the 4th generation they will come again.

Gen 15:15–17 **And you shall go to your fathers in peace. You shall be buried in a good old age. But in the fourth generation they shall come here again, for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full. And it happened, the sun went down, and it was dark and behold, a smoking furnace, and a burning lamp passed between those pieces.**

Abram's problem is, he does not have a son from his own loins. These promises have two categories. There is the doctrine of future things and Abram's own life. All he has to do to relax is to believe these promises. His progeny will come back and live on the land where he is. Time will elapse and the elapse of time does not have to shake him. You don't have to be shaken up or upset. God has a right timing on everything. There is a right time. God has a right person for us. All we have to do is faith rest it. Believe His character, believe His promises; God's character is perfect, so we can trust Him.

Rom. 4:13–14 **For the promise that he should be the heir of the world was not to Abraham or to his seed through the Law, but through the righteousness of faith. For if they of the Law are heirs, faith is made void and the promise is made of no effect;**

Rom 4:16–19 **Therefore it is of faith so that it might be according to grace; for the promise to be made sure to all the seed, not only to that which is of the Law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all (as it has been written, "I have made you**

a father of many nations") --before God, whom he believed, who makes the dead live, and calls the things which do not exist as though they do exist. For he who beyond hope believed on hope for him to become the father of many nations (according to that which was spoken, "So your seed shall be"). And not being weak in faith, he did not consider his own body already dead (being about a hundred years old) or the deadening of Sarah's womb.

They are past the age of being able to have children. They are dead sexually. Physically alive but sexually dead. They have a hopeless situation; and a man less than Abraham might worry a little; but he does not.

Abraham is weak in everything else, but he is not weak in faith. He considered not his own body now dead. He is alive. He is incapable of sexual relations. He is incapable of having sex. Just open your ears and turn off your trauma.

Rom. 4:20–21: He did not stagger at the promise of God through unbelief, but was strong in faith, giving glory to God, and being fully persuaded that what God had promised, He was also able to perform.

You build up muscle day by day. When you build up muscles, you have a routine. The day your feel your worst and you do it when it hurts and you do it when it feels great. This is what faith rest is. It is a day by day thing. No one builds strength by exercising once a year. You must exercise regularly. Abraham was strong spiritually. His faith rest glorified God. God did the whole thing for him. God revived his entire sex structure. They got the full sexual vigor of youth and they had a son.

Later, Abraham had 5 or 6 sons later after Sarah died. Some of these nations came from Esau, from Lot, and from Abraham. There was a quarter of a century where it got worse and worse. He was never discouraged, because he believed the promise of God, except for one short period where his wife came up with a beautiful idea, and like a jackass, he went along with it, for operation Hagar.

There is no such thing as a hopeless situation in our life. What God promised, God is able to perform. That is an application of doctrine to the situation; that is the application of the essence box to the situation.

Gen. 15:13, 16–21: And He said to Abram, You must surely know that your seed shall be a stranger in a land not theirs, and shall serve them. And they shall afflict them four hundred years. But in the fourth generation they shall come here again, for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full...In the same day Jehovah made a covenant with Abram, saying, I have given this land to your seed, from the river of Egypt to the great river, the river Euphrates, the Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, and the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the giants, and the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites.

There are a lot of things which could have been covered, and the writer of Hebrews says one thing, By faith Joseph made mention concerning the departing of the children of Israel. For 400 years, the bones of Joseph would be the Bible of the Jews.

Gen 50:25–26: [And Joseph took an oath of the sons of Israel, saying, God will surely visit you, and you shall carry up my bones from here. So Joseph died, being a hundred and ten years old. And they embalmed him, and put him in a coffin in Egypt.](#)

They lived their lives on the basis of promises and doctrines. Joseph said he believed these promises and he believed in the doctrine of resurrection.

Exo 13:19 [And Moses took the bones of Joseph with him. For he had strictly sworn the sons of Israel, saying, God will surely visit you, and you shall carry my bones away from here with you.](#)

Joshua 24:32 [And the bones of Joseph, which the sons of Israel brought up out of Egypt, they buried in Shechem, in a piece of ground which Jacob bought from the sons of Hamor the father of Shechem for a hundred pieces of silver. And it became the inheritance of the sons of Joseph.](#)

When Joseph and Abraham and Isaac are all raised up, they will be raised up on the same ground. Joseph all standing in their resurrection bodies, as a testimony to God's grace and power. Joseph faith rested it all the way.

Num. 13: Faith rest Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #10 circa 4/16/69

God has a plan for our life; there was never a person for whom God did not have a plan. Our sins were poured out on Jesus Christ and judged, and this is called spiritual death. As our substitute, the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross. We enter the plan of God in one moment of time, by expressing faith in Jesus Christ. At the moment of faith in Christ, we have 34 things, which includes God loving us with a perfect love. The next principle is phase II, which is the believer in time. We are believer priests, ambassadors of Christ, and He has given us unlimited assets.

God gives us promises. Doctrine explains who and what God is and it explains the whole concept of grace. Our faith is to learn and to claim promises and to apply doctrine to experience. When we do this, we have perfect inner happiness, which is +H. God found a way to share His happiness with us. We can also have a relaxed mental attitude. God has it and we can have it. It is known as ἀγάπη love. We are minus the mental attitude sins; we are not vindictive, antagonistic, implacable. We respect the volition of other people and we respect the privacy of other people.

The Jews have had one year's training and now they are about to face a crisis test. They have failed every other kind of previous test; no manna, no water, etc. They failed because they did not operate under faith rest. When you flunk every quiz in class, then you will flunk the final exam. This is the final exam. They will flunk the final exam.

They are about to enter into the land, and God says, *hold up, Moses; send out a patrol*. You have to figure out what you are going to attack. 12 tribes send out one man each to check out the land. A patrol of 12 and they will spend 40 days checking out the land.

You don't just jump into a project. When you have so many bodies in a church, you need some sort of an administration. If you have heard the expression, *blind-faith*, it is incorrect; faith goes in, eyes open. Faith is smart, perceptive and it is everything, when it has as its object, doctrine and promises. They send out 12 generals, instead of 11 privates and 1 lieutenant.

Num 13:1–4: [And Jehovah spoke to Moses saying, Send men so that they may search the land of Canaan, which I give to the sons of Israel. You shall send a man from every tribe of their fathers, everyone a ruler among them. And Moses by the command of Jehovah sent them from the wilderness of Paran. All those men were heads of the sons of Israel.](#)

They are named next. Caleb, who is named dog, was sent next. His dog's name is king. Never been seasick. It is a people dog; happiest around people; not happy around other dogs. You leave for an hour, and the dog lays down by the door where you left, and gives you the most reproachful look when you return.

When you wanted to be unkind, you called someone a dog. It is like calling someone an SOB today, which is also a dog. No idea how this guy got this name. With a name like *dog*, Caleb did not lead a normal life. People name their children odd things; but this is particularly unusual. He is like most Christians who do not live under normal circumstances. Who determines what is normal? And who is normal? What set of standards and specs say that you are normal. Normality by even modern psychological definitions is someone who has adjusted to his circumstances, whether adverse or otherwise. Caleb became an early believer; right from the start, he is one of the great men in history in orientation to the grace of God. There has never been a man or woman oriented to the grace of God who was not called everything in the books by their own generation. Bible doctrine was more real to him than any situation that he faced. For this reason, he was oriented to grace. You can be oriented to grace if you learn doctrine every day. His name was never a handicap; his name goes down in history as one of the greats.

A great tune called *A Dogface Soldier*. Bob's copy is busted now. #4 man on the patrol is Caleb.

Num 13:6 [Of the tribe of Judah, Caleb the son of Jephunneh.](#)

This next guy you may not recognize. Hoshea, Joshua, Oshea are all the same name.

Num 13:8 [Of the tribe of Ephraim, Oshea the son of Nun.](#)

1000's of years ago, they knew how to make a reconnaissance; you travel the high ground so that you can see everything. Moses was an excellent tactician.

Num 13:17–20: [And Moses sent them to spy out the land of Canaan, and said to them, Go up this way, southward, and go up into the mountain. And see the land, what it is, and the people that live in it, whether it is strong or weak, few or many. And see what the land is that they live in, whether it is good or bad; and what cities they dwell in, whether in tents or in strongholds; and what the land is, whether fat or lean, whether there is wood in it or not. And be of good courage, and bring of the fruit of the land. Now the time was the time of first ripe grapes.](#)

This patrol needs to have the right mental attitude. We do not have enough men of fighting age with the right mental attitude. Every student strike and every revolt against authority is perfect illustration. Some of the finest people that we have are fighting a war, as much as they are allowed to.

[Be of good courage.](#) Don't get shook; don't fall apart. There are so many things for these men to catch. A small patrol in enemy territory means that you must have nerve. There must be a mental attitude of courage. This is exactly what Joshua had and what Caleb had and what the others did not have. Joshua and Caleb believed the promises of God and the others did not. When this patrol returns, the believers will be divided into two camps: 2 say lets go into the land and 10 will say *no*. There are giants in the land. Just as there are giants in that land, there are giants in our own lives. We face a lot of things which seem to overwhelm us. There are people who bother you. They may be relatives or they may live near you or you may be married to one. We all have giants. There are certain people who will disturb your equilibrium. They may be hostile, they may be antagonistic. We all have situations or circumstances; it might be something that we just don't like to do. They become giants to us. People and circumstances. A 3rd factor: the details of life concept; or lack of them, can become giants.

Circumstances could be general suffering or general prosperity; but there are also conditions, like loneliness; for others, too many people. Everyone has their own giants. There are giants in our land. Greater is He that is in you than he who is in the world.

It is fun to whip giants. Bob played under 3 types of football. Under a single wing, he had to block a left tackle. Bob liked it because he could smash down men who were stronger than he was. There is something lovely about the way a giant falls, and embarrassing when a little guy cleans up on you. Caleb is probably a little guy and he is happy whipping giants. Caleb will wait 85 years to whip these giants. The first time Caleb saw the giants, he was with a team. They all saw the giants. 10 feet tall, they had big spears. But Caleb knew that God gave them the land. He was not disturbed once. The key was Caleb. What happens when they come back?

Num 13:21–25: [So they went up and searched the land from the wilderness of Zin to Rehob, as men come to Hamath. And they went up by the south and came to Hebron, where Ahiman, Sheshai, and Talmi, the sons of Anak were. \(Now Hebron was built seven years before Zoan in Egypt.\) And they came to the valley of Eshcol and cut from there a branch with one cluster of grapes. And they carried it between two men upon a staff, and some of the pomegranates and of the figs. The place was called the valley of Eshcol because](#)

of the cluster of grapes which the sons of Israel cut down from there. And they returned from spying out the land after forty days.

Kadesh Barnea is the key point. They bivouaced from Haren to Kadesh. What they find confirms what the Lord told them: a land flowing with milk and honey, a promise repeated over and over again. It was a prosperous, wonderful land. All they had to do was believe. The only believers who enjoy the provision of God are those who see his provision by faith.

We have a home, a car, clothes; God has provided. But He also provides for the soul. What we have in the soul, we see by faith. The eyes of the soul are greater than the eyes which look around us. It take faith rest to appreciate the provisions of grace.

The land was just as God had described it and just as He had promised.

Num 13:26–28: And they left and came to Moses and to Aaron, and to all the congregation of the sons of Israel, to the wilderness of Paran, to Kadesh. And they brought back word to them and to all the congregation, and showed them the fruit of the land. And they told him and said, We came to the land where you sent us, and surely it flows with milk and honey. And this is the fruit of it. However, the people that dwell in the land are strong, and the cities are walled, very great. And also we saw the children of Anak there.

They use a big *but* here. The Jebusites are normal sized, but tough warriors and they were not gotten rid of for a long time. They will not be conquered for a 1000 years. Their city was Jerusalem. Jerusalem did not belong to the Jews until 1000 B.C. For 400 years, the Jebusites were not conquered. The emphasis on the majority report is upon the giants, but the tough ones are tucked away in this report.

Num 13:29–30: The Amalekites dwell in the land of the south, and the Hittites, and the Jebusites, and the Amorites dwell in the mountains. And the Canaanites dwell by the sea and by the coast of Jordan. And Caleb stilled the people before Moses and said, Let us go up at once and possess it. For we are well able to overcome it.

Caleb expresses faith rest. The others express human viewpoint.

Num 13:31–33: But the men that went up with him said, We are not able to go up against the people, for they are stronger than we. And they brought up an evil report of the land which they had searched to the sons of Israel, saying, The land through which we have gone to search it, is a land that eats up those who live in it. And all the people whom we saw in it were men of stature. And there we saw the giants, the sons of Anak, of the giants. And we were in our own sight like grasshoppers, and so we were in their sight.

This is the weeping of those who flunk the final exam. The flunked all of the quizzes and now they wept all night. Do you know how hard it is to spend the entire night weeping? You have to think more and more in the same morbid thing over and over again. Weeping requires you to think over and over again about what bothers them.

Bob saw these students demanded more representation and he remembers those who died in wwll all over. He lost a lot of friends there and these wild-haired students are not worthy to lick the feet of those who fought and died. That was a generation of marvelous men wne tout and died so that these jackasses can go on braying. These imbeciles who have no respect for the rights and privacy of others and do not understand even the most basic concepts of freedom and nation.

The Doctrine of Crying

If you think you need to cry all night, drink a gallon of water first. You cannot just turn on crying and turn it off; when you cry, it comes from your soul.

1. Bona-fide crying. Jesus Christ Who is unique cried 3 times on record. John 11:35 Jerusalem and on the cross (Heb. 5:7). Each time, He had something in mind, and each time He had a bonafide reason to cry.
 - a. Jesus loved him personally as a friend. This is right and it is normal that He died at the tomb of Lazarus. There is nothing wrong with this.
 - b. He cried over the city of Jerusalem. He saw it being destroyed in 70 A.D. We wept because of the tragedy that the Jews brought upon themselves. If He were here now, He would weep as well. We see the Communist influence; socialism is seen as a panacea. Everyone says, we cannot go back to the former ways.
 - c. Jesus knew pain as we will never experience; He died for our sins; and in Heb. 5:7 and Psalm 22 indicates that He cried, facing the maximum amount of pain and pressure.
2. Believers weeping. When can believers cry and it is bonafide?
 - a. 1Thess. 4:13 expression of sorrow
 - b. John 11:35 compassion
 - c. Faith rest technique. Psalm 30:5
 - d. Weeping for one's country. Jer. 9:1 Lam. 1:16
 - e. Weeping which does not direct connect with the mentality, because of pain; in reaction to pain. Rev. 21:4
3. Sinful weeping:
 - a. David wept because he failed in 2Sam. 14: 18:33 19:1–4 failing to forgive Absalom. David stood at his tomb and had regrets.
 - b. Weeping 1Sam. 30:4 during a catastrophe. They did not know what to do, and then they cried. David cried and then knew what to do, after asking God. Weeping isn't solving anything here. Weeping switches from thinking in the soul. You are just feeling sorry for yourself.
 - c. Weeping of the old timers who did not like the new Temple Ezra 3 weeping for the past. The new temple was smaller.
 - d. Joel 1:5 weeping of the drunkard during a catastrophe.
 - e. Matt. 8:12 25:30 the unbeliever in judgment
 - f. Num. 14:1 because of the giants in the land, and a lack of faith rest; an expression of unbelief. Rom. 14:23

4. There will be no weeping in eternity; none. No sorrow, no tears, no tears, no death. Rev. 21:4 Isa. 30:19
5. Crying which stems from the emotino of the soul; a weeping of happiness. Weeping can express great happiness form a great upsurge of emotion; the weeping of love. The weeping of weddings. It is a privacy weeping.

This is a function of lack of faith rest.

2Tim. 3:1 Nationalism Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #11 circa 4/23/69

This is a digression from the crack up of the Jews at Kadesh Barnea; a deliberate, planned experimental digression.

Nationalism is one of the safe-guards for the survival and protection of the human race in Satan's world.

Racial, geographical and linguistic definitions.

Most races have been obscured, but there are a few races, Apaches, and some others made up a pure race. Most nations are set up geographically. There is usually a common language.

Nationalism

1. Great Britain speak several languages: English (Oxford to Cockney); Gaelic; Irish, and Welsh. We all more or less speak the same language in our country.
2. A national entity must have a system of law; common to this national entity. This is designed to protect the privacy, property of individuals; and usually has a criminal code, etc. There are also social laws, although law is never designed to do this.
3. A culture. Ours is basically western European. Classicism to rationalism. Historical practice, modus operandi, modus vivendi of a people.
4. A proper system of law enforcement and law. This begins with capital punishment and works down.
5. There must be protection from the outside, which requires a well-organized military. Designed to protect from encroachment from without.
6. Some system of government administration.
7. There is also a principle of economy in the national entity. Most nations begin with free enterprise and end up with some system of socialism.
8. There must always be a separation of religion and state. Religion is the right and choice of the individual. Whenever religion becomes a part of the state or has an influence n the state, all objectivity is lost.

We also recognize that God disciplines nations. There is also the destruction of a nation and the removal of a nation. When there is a lack of dependence upon God and God's

plan. Nations are destroyed by emotionalism. When it becomes the criterion for life, so that objectivity is lost, then you have the deterioration of a nation. Forsaking the Lord. Rejection of Bible doctrine. There are many reasons for a nation going down. Nations rise and become prosperous and great; and there are reasons for a rise and for a decline.

The unbeliever is negative toward the gospel; the believer is negative toward doctrine; and then there will be a deterioration of the people and the nation.

Γινωσκω = *observation*. The soul collects certain types of information. When you observe from the mind, events, trends in your own national entity, then you have γινωσκω.

As a believer priest, we need to be able to interpret current historical trends. Bible doctrine is the basis for fulfilling this command. Huge amount of pacifism today; young people are committing themselves to mental institutions to dodge the draft. They try to get themselves section 8-ed out of the military. Never before have there been so many people on dope. All of these things we can observe and see and we can come to some conclusions about our own national entity.

2Tim. 3:1 **Keep on knowing this also, that in the last days grievous times will be at hand.**

FDR gave away huge numbers of people to Communism in Asia. There were people who had enough doctrine to recognize that what FDR did was criminal. We was doing something to western Europe which was criminal. One decision by one man put millions of people into slavery. Chamberlain met Hitler and said, "There will be peace in our time" and people cheered. Some could see this and interpret history correctly. Believer priests can do this.

Last days can refer to the last days of a national entity, as well as the last days of the Church Age. Χαλεπος χαιρος is an era of time; an epoch. There is a period of time when these things can be observed. If you are alive when a nation is declining, then God still has a purpose for your life. Difficulties in a nation do not mean that we ought to lie down and give up.

Colonial times, when there was a vigorous time of freedom; no compulsory education. A complete and total break from the decadence and false concepts of Europe. Behind all of this was born-again believers.

Eleazar Wheeler founded a college Dartmouth. Then one in Connecticut designed to teach Bible doctrine, and this school was called Yale. Then the Boston commons established a great college, Harvard. These schools went with Bible doctrine is the curriculum.

Characteristics of perilous times; ανθρωπος = *people*. A description of individuals. A maximum number of people with this. There is no seduction here like you might think; and just because x number of women have been seduced this year does not mean we are in trouble; but liberal pastors is the problem.

2Ti 3:2 For men will be self-lovers, money-lovers, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,...

autos+philos = self-love. ἀγαπή is a mental attitude love; φίλος is a total soul love. When the soul is filled with scar tissue on the soul, the darkness will shut out the light of Bible doctrine. There is a total soul involvement. This is where a nation begins to decline. A self-lover is where there are no rivals. All it takes is scar tissue on the soul.

If the soul is shut down with scar tissue, love bounces off the scar tissue and looks inward. Self-confidence and self- are not self-love. When you are a lover of self, it is dark inside and you are only interested in your own self and self-gratification, which is what comes next.

Φιλαγυρος = *love of silver, money*. The details of life are seized and grasped as happiness. Lovers of the details of life. You love yourself which leads you to self-gratification. Once you begin to gratify yourself, then you begin to express an attitude toward yourself, which is boasters or braggarts; self-promotion. If you have scar tissue. You love self and you begin to gratify yourself; and you push yourself. The only thing wheezing out of your soul is bragging and boasting and self-promotion. When you love yourself, you promote yourself. Bob has seen wild parties where everyone is trying to promote themselves. No real fun. Self-promotion means that there is pride in existence. ὑπερρηφανος = *trying to appear over and above everyone else*. Self-promotion; self gratification; pride results in slandering God; blasphemy. It means *to malign [God]*. self-love to self-gratification which leads to self-promotion, which leads to boasting, leading to pride, leading to disregard and slandering of God; which leads to the disregard and slandering of the divine institutions.

A university student is dealing with a class where they want to know everything about him; and these are things which are a matter of privacy and no one else's business. People have a right to their privacy when they do not violate criminal law. All of this is destroyed and disregard for divine institutions. Then there is a trend toward internationalism. In selecting a divine institution which best represents a nation going down in flames is when there is disobedience to parents. This is a basic tenet; and this lack of recognition of authority.

Children have to be trained to respect the rights of others; they must be trained in patriotism. Elementary education and high school education was to train kids to understand their country and to recognize how wonderful their country is. Bob schools did not teach him sex and manners and how to be herd-bound. He learned about sex from his parents and manners from them. All sorts of goofy things are taught today.

The big crime push now is in the late teens; and they are characterized by disobedience to parents. This means rejection of all types of authority. There is the authority of the church, of the Bible, in the divine institutions (volition and self-control); husband; parents; law; authority in athletics, in business, in the armed forces, etc. In almost every area,

authority is being broken down. Schools have lost control; student rioting. The basic breakdown is in the home.

Αχαριστος = *ungrateful*. Thanksgiving is a specific, where there is giving and where there is a response to giving. Grateful means appreciation of life, of one's parents, of one's school. There is a soulish appreciation. If you have scar tissue on the soul, you have no ability to appreciate life. If you cannot appreciate life, then you cheapen life; same for music and art. You can take this into every part of life that you want to. Ungrateful means that you do not appreciate anything in life. Scar tissue on the soul explains why young people smoke refer. It explains why they take dope. They have no gratefulness; no general appreciation for life; so they have to seek a stimuli in order to replace their lack of gratefulness. In Bob's teens, there were great writers, Sabatini and Jeffrey Farnal; they wrote novels of relationships on a high plane. If you have no gratefulness, then you cheapen life. These all come from scar tissue on the soul. No capacity or ability. Ruth Parkington. Penrod and Sam; they had a marvelous time. Tom Sawyer. They had an appreciation for life and they did not cheapen life. You hurt your life when you cheapen it. Ungrateful is had to adequately translate. Soulsh orientation. In gratitude also indicates scar tissue on the soul, which means no capacity for love. This means no capacity to love God. Ανοσιος = *without appreciation of God; no capacity for love in category 1*.

Self-love means we shut down the soul with scar tissue, which results in self-gratification, which leads to self-promotion and boasting. Boasting expresses mental attitude sin pride. Pride results in maligning or blaspheming God. Maligning God results in disregard in the divine institutions. Disregard for the divine institutions results in a failure to orient to life, to appreciate life, which is called being ungrateful. The more scar tissue on your soul, the more you cheapen your life. Ungratefulness and lack of gratitude is negative volition to God. No capacity to love in any of the categories.

2Ti 3:3 **without natural affection, unyielding, false accusers, without self-control, savage, despisers of good,**

Left bank scar tissue and right bank scar tissue. Αστοργος = *without capacity to love; without the instinct of love*. Scar tissue on the soul; you will operate in pseudo love. Where life is wonderful and how you cheapen life. A lover loves life. If you are in love, love is fun, and life is fun, and you cannot separate them. Pseudo love cheapens these.

Αστροδος = *implacable, unyielding*. No one can get you to agree on anything. They pour out a libration to the gods and then once for themselves. That is where toasting began. Bob's dad said, "Down the hatch." He never poured his first double-scotch on the floor. This means that no one will pour out a libration with you; it means *implacable*. He has so much scar tissue that they have no basis for capacity for love; no appreciation for life in general. It is a terrible mental attitude sin.

This leads to false accusers. Διαβολος = *treacherous informer*. When a person is implacable with scar tissue, they become treacherous. They are antagonistic toward others; there is jealousy and bitterness.

Incontinent which is ακρατης = *without self-discipline*. Failure to recognize authority. No self-discipline means that you are unable to concentrate. You might find someone who catches your eye in Bible class. That means no self-discipline if you have to stare at the doll. The ability to concentrate; self-discipline is important. No recognition of authority; disorganization in the soul. Lack of self-discipline. This leads to brutality. When you lose control of yourself, the real you comes through. The nicest people in the world can be brutal. Some know how to do it mentally and physically. If you have no control over yourself, this means at some point, the old sin nature will break through and it will be violent or brutal. Suppose you lose control of your temper at some point; you haul off and hit someone; you clobber them. Girls do the same, but it is slow.

Bob's college roommate was the nicest guy in the world unless he tied one on, and then he got mean. He had marvelous control until alcohol erased this control. Bob has seen men who are wonderful, and then they get behind the wheel. They become incontinent and fierce. We sometimes lose something in the Old English. Once you become incontinent and fierce, then you become a despiser of intrinsic good. No love for divine good or for intrinsic good.

A red light when someone is driving is intrinsic good; the red light is for our own good. But with a sniffer full, we might just drive right through. One might despise intrinsic good and someone else might despise divine good. There is scar tissue on both banks of the soul and the soul is in darkness.

2Tim. 3:4 **traitors, reckless, puffed up, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God,**

A traitor is someone who lacks loyalty. You can be a traitor to your employer. To your friends. True loyalty is a great virtue and it cannot be bought. When you can buy loyalty, then it is not loyalty. That is a traitor. If one can buy it, then someone else can buy it with more money. There are many loyalties in life. In business, it is hard to find someone who is loyal. They are always complaining. Loyalty to parents, home, school and country disappears as a nation declines. One of the greatest signs is a lack of patriotism and a refusal to fight for one's country.

Προπητης = *to fall on your face, off-balance*. No loyalties means you are reckless or precipitous. Now a verb. Τυφω = *a head full of smoke*. This is mental attitude of a soul loaded with scar tissue. If you have a head filled with smoke, then you are a lover of pleasure more than you are a lover of God. Your soul is covered with scar tissue so you want to gratify yourself instead of love God.

These things come about from scar tissue of the soul. Light cannot come through the appetures of the soul. Light cannot come in and doctrine cannot circulate. Your soul pulls in religion. The cause for all of these things is religion.

2Ti 3:5 **having a form [mold, system] of godliness [religion; false doctrine], but denying the power of it; even turn away from these.**

You are to push them away; push them out the door. Avoid and reject them for your own benefit.

2Ti 3:6 **For of these are those who creep into houses [infiltrate churches] and lead captive silly women loaded with sins, led away with different kinds of lusts,**

they put on a beautiful suit of clothes and infiltrate churches and teach that which is false. They capture by deceit. Christians can be deceived. Summarized by *silly women*, which is actually a neuter adjective, which refers to men and women.

Thieme has been at it for 19 years. Stupid woman; describes anyone who falls for that which is false.

These women are piled up with sins; these are unconfessed sins which put scar tissue on the soul. Perfect tense. Religion and legalism sucked into their souls. These are sins which put scar tissue on the soul.

They are led astray by diversified lusts. This is an alternate to true soul breathing. They form one sincere active person.

2Ti 3:7 **ever learning and never able to come to the full knowledge of the truth.**

Or, **at all times receiving instruction, but never being able to come to the knowledge of the truth.**

Religion and scar tissue meet in a darkened soul. The lusts can be a variety of lusts. At all times receiving instruction. ἐπίγνωσις is found here. A full knowledge. This indicates scar tissue on the soul which leads to a chain of events. A vacuum is created in the soul and it pulls in religion and false doctrine. This means you are on the way down. You can be saved and you have eternal life, but you are looking to have a miserable life.

Num. 14:12 Faith rest Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #12 circa 4/30/69

We are now continuing lesson #10. The Jews are standing right outside the land, having taken the shortest route to the land, and this is where they should have crossed over, in Kedesh Barnea. Majority report of 10 saying that we could not take the land; minority report of 2 saying that the land is theirs for the taking. The minority based their decision upon faith rest; they believed the doctrine of the Palestinian Covenant; they believed God's promises and behind Him is His perfect character. It is impossible for God to waltz on an obligation. Their decision was based upon the faith rest technique. The majority report was based upon human viewpoint. The scar tissue covering the appetures of their souls sucked in human viewpoint.

Faith rest is a technique which demands food; it constantly must be fed and the feeding of faith rest depends upon the object. Doctrine and promises and the provisions of the provision of God. You have to know doctrine and know the promises. It is the object of the faith rest technique which counts.

They wept all night. They sat around and cried all night. This leads to the doctrine of weeping.

You ought to know when you should cry and when not to. Bob's dad would lick him until he cried and then lick him until he stopped. He grit his teeth until he cried. He felt that males could get by without crying.

Weeping

1. Bonafide weeping,
 - a. The Lord Jesus Christ, who lived 33 years on this earth as an impeccable person. John 11:35
 - b. Patriotic weeping; weeping for Jerusalem. Jesus Christ was perfect and He was patriotic. Bob just came out of the northwest where he saw a tremendous amount of pacifism. There is no excuse for any person to be a pacifist. We run into a tremendous amount of this thing. Luke 19:41
 - c. Heb. 5:7 weeping at the cross, which expresses pain, agony and the intensity of pain.
2. Bonafide weeping for the rest of the human race:
 - a. Sorrow 1Thess. 4:13
 - b. Expression of compassion John 11:35
 - c. Weeping of faith rest Psalm 30:5
 - d. Reaction to pain. Rev. 21:4 implies this.
 - e. Not mentioned is weeping from the expression of the appreciation of the emotion of the soul. This is where the emotion is stimulated in an unusual manner. Seattle pastor Jensen and they were told not to call him brother, so they call him PJ, for Pastor Jensen. He was one of the toughest guys where he came from. He watched his son and got a tear in his eye.
3. Sinful weeping:
 - a. David wept at the death of Absalom, but he was guilty here, guilty of a half-forgiveness. This expresses his failure. 2Sam. 18:33 19:1-4
 - b. Weeping hysterically in catastrophe. David and his men return and the Amalekites had come and took away their children and wives.
 - c. Ezra 3:12-13 weeping of the old timers who did not like the new Temple, which was too small in their estimation. They were superficial and they were looking at externals. A weeping of frustration.
 - d. Joel 1:5 the weeping of the drunkard in catastrophe.
 - e. I missed one?

f. Weeping of human viewpoint. Num. 14:1 which expresses the breakdown of the faith rest technique.

4. Category #3 there is no weeping in phase III. No more sorrow, no more tears, no more pain, no more death; the old things have passed away.

Num 14:1: [And all the congregation lifted up their voice and cried. And the people wept that night.](#)

They wept all night, they were frustration, and they developed mental attitude sins against Moses and Aaron. God brought them to the land. They were bitter because of the chariots because of the fortification. When you become bitter, you have had it. It was a sinful weeping. They were drained, they had a vacuum in their mentalities and in that vacuum they sucked in scar tissue.

They lacked faith rest. They pulled into their souls mental attitude sins, which produced self-induced misery. They lose their soul's poise. They lose the ability to think and to relax and to orient and they had to find someone they could blame.

Psychology has been working on a theory that every adult problem that you have can be related to your environment. You go to them with 3 problems, and he will try to relate them to something from your past, and he feels this is necessary in order to establish some stability in your life.

If someone is a cocoo clock, you can still take the pressure off yourself and blame it on someone else. It is the sin nature which is being blamed. There is quite a bit of difference between the psychological approach and the approach of the Word of God. This illustrates the concept. The weeping expresses the frustration of human viewpoint. The next morning they have mental attitude sins. They have bitterness. So they must find a patsy. If they want to relieve the tensions of mental attitude sins in the soul, they must find someone to blame. What better patsy to find than Moses and Aaron. They thought bitterness and they expressed bitterness. It was all Aaron's and Moses's fault.

Robert E. Lee when meeting his men after a defeat would take the blame. Those men, when they cracked, were weeping; and Lee persuaded them to rally. A great illustration of maximum pressure situation. Probably the finest personnel assembled in one army. The individual men were incredible; but they fell apart on this occasion.

People have to have a patsy, and this is true whether you recognize it or not. We blame stuff on a president, and when things go wrong, we blame him, even though there may be a number of organizations under him. It is usual to try to blame one person.

Some people think that any kind of leadership is glamorous. They have no idea as to the responsibility that is involved. Any sunbird down in the field could make a mistake, and Thieme would be blamed for it when he commanded thousands of men.

People will inevitably blame someone when things go wrong. Moses, so far, has not broke down, but Aaron may have. We don't know. Moses did what God commanded.

God sent out a reconnaissance patrol to show them that they were no capable on their own of taking the land. This report brought out that the people could not enter the land. It was not their incapacibilities, but a breakdown of the faith rest technique. God told them in every way that He could that He had given them the land. The next generation failed to conquer the rest of the land.

We should sit down and figure out, what are the giants in our own lives. Bob would travel with his dad all over; New Orleans, SF, LA, etc. He could take out his box of lead soldiers and he could amuse himself in a bar with the soldiers. Bob carried them with him and they were quite entertaining.

We carry around our own giants everywhere we go. We carry them in our souls. There are giants in our life because of what goes on in our soul. When there is a breakdown in faith rest, then we cannot do anything. How can we use faith rest unless we have some giants? We may wear out one set and get a new set. There is no excuse for not being able to handle the giants in the land. This is to entertain us and to build us up. We have these giants with us and Caleb and Joshua said, "Let's get the giants."

These Jews had many opportunities by which they could have increased their faith rest, but they did not. They were only 1 year out of Egypt in Kedesh Barnea, and they will be turned back. In making the circle that they will make, it will take them 39 years.

There is no sense to give these people the land if they are unable to appreciate it.

Men, how do they distinguish between a girl you like and a girl you don't like? You date a few of them. Might be a beautiful gal, but she might have the vocabulary of a gnat. Or a big talker, but bores you to death. We learn to appreciate. They develop the capacity and begin to recognize that there are some things that look good on the surface, but not up close.

The giants are right where the land is. They are right in the middle of what God promised Israel. These people have no capacity to appreciate the land. They have no capacity. Everyone who was 20 and up who failed at Kedesh Barnea died because they had no capacity to appreciate the land. God said, "The desert is good enough for you; no giants in the desert, so you can die there." He says, "If you want the land, then you have to face the giants who are there." Those who died, died the sin unto death.

"How can I tell if I am on the discipline loop?" If you get out of control, emotionally, if you avoid doctrine or you do not apply it; then you are under discipline. The dumbest thing in the world is for some cluck to tell you, "Have faith." It is the object of faith which counts. God has revealed Himself in His word. You cannot believe doctrine and apply it unless you know doctrine. You cannot believe what you do not know.

Num 14:2 [And all the sons of Israel murmured against Moses and against Aaron. And the whole congregation said to them, Oh that we had died in the land of Egypt! Or, Oh that we had died in the wilderness!](#)

Prov. 24:6: [For by wise counsel you shall make your war; and in a multitude of wise men there is safety.](#) Mistranslated.

Malarkey; there is no safety in a multitude of counselors. 50,000 people could be sincere and agree and wrong. This is why we have one general. Otherwise, we ought to have 25,000 generals and one private. This should read, [Victory is in the greatness of the one counseling.](#)

They complain, [“Would to God we have died in the Desert!”](#) This is great emotion. They are stupid. They are completely inconsistent. Better to be killed by a giant doing God’s will than to die in the desert. There is nothing more inconsistent or unstable than a believer without doctrine. No animal in the world is dumber than a sheep. Easy to get them running in all directions. A believer without doctrine is right-down-the-middle stupid. God will let them die in the desert.

All they had to do is say, “Okay, we will go into the land and take it.” But they have rejected God and have not trusted Him time after time.

They use their children as an excuse. Use your children as an excuse and someday, they will make you miserable. They will make you miserable for a long time.

Their children here will defeat the giants.

Num 14:3: [And why has Jehovah brought us into this land to fall by the sword, so that our wives and our sons should be a prey? Would it not be better for us to return to Egypt?](#)

They are cowards. Cowards die many deaths; brave men die but once.

Num 14:4: [And they said to one another, Let us make a leader, and let us return to Egypt.](#)

They don’t like Moses’ leadership, even though he is doing exactly what God tells him to do. They are going to elect a leader to go against God’s will. Election can produce the worst leaders. Divinely given authority can be the best leader. Moses was a trained, divinely appointed leader. Moses did not get up and argue with them; he faith-rested it.

Num 14:5–10: [And Moses and Aaron fell on their faces before all the assembly of the congregation of the sons of Israel. And Joshua the son of Nun, and Caleb the son of Jephunneh, of those that searched the land, tore their clothes. And they spoke to all the company of the sons of Israel saying, The land which we passed through to search is an exceedingly good land. If Jehovah delights in us, then He will bring us into this land and give it to us, a land which flows with milk and honey. Only do not rebel against Jehovah, neither fear the people of the land. For they are bread for us. Their protection has moved](#)

from them, and Jehovah is with us. Do not fear them. But all the congregation said to stone them with stones. And the glory of Jehovah appeared in the tabernacle of the congregation before all the sons of Israel.

What Joshua and Caleb say correlate what they observed with the promises of God. The terms are agricultural terms for a prosperous country. They say, "Fear them not" in referring to the giants of the land. The congregation tried to stone them. This is what stopped the stoning.

Num 14:11–12: **And Jehovah said to Moses, How long will this people provoke Me? And how long will it be before they believe Me, for all the signs which I have shown among them? I will strike them with the pestilence and will disinherit them, and will make of you a greater nation and mightier than they.**

God suggests a few things to do—to strike these people down. God promises to make Moses a great nation. Moses' wife left him and she took her two sons, he will never see again. Undoubtedly, Moses is pissed off at this bunch, hearing them weep all night. This is a great offer to Moses, as he has passed every test which has come his way. He showed his trust for God over and over again. Most people would say, "Fine with me. I'll stand here and watch you wipe them out. Save me a girl or find me one." This is a fantastic temptation to Moses. These people are ugly and repugnant to him. These are the kind of people you want to avoid. Moses accepted the responsibility for the people. This is the greatest faith rest, which requires a great deal of doctrine. God put him in charge as leader and God made promises to Moses with this people. Moses understands the immutability of God. These people walked out on Moses and he did not walk out on them. This is a great grace man. Even though the people turned against him, he did not turn against them. This is Moses at the height of his greatness. They have abused his lieutenants; they have complained and threatened him; and Moses sticks with them. From start to finish, it was operation grace and Moses stays with grace.

Num 14:13–20: **And Moses said to Jehovah, Then the Egyptians will hear, for You have brought up this people in Your might from among them. And they will say to the inhabitant of this land, They have heard that You, Jehovah, are among this people, who is seen eye to eye. You are Jehovah, and Your cloud stands over them, and You go before them in a pillar of cloud by day, and in a pillar of fire by night. And will You kill this people as one man? Then the nations who have heard Your fame will speak, saying, Because Jehovah was not able to bring this people into the land which He swore to them, therefore He has slain them in the wilderness. And now, I beseech You, let the power of my Lord be great, according as You have spoken, saying, Jehovah is long-suffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression, and by no means clearing the guilty, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the sons to the third and fourth generation. I beseech You, pardon the iniquity of this people according to the greatness of Your mercy, and as You have forgiven this people from Egypt even until now.**

Everything is about Who and What God is. Moses does not want the people all around to think less of God because this people are wiped out. "If you kill all these people, then the

nations who have heard of Your fame will..." defame God. Moses is completely oriented to grace. Moses does not even mention Himself. His soul was oriented to doctrine. He stands up straight. He is not superficial. He might be called proud by a lot of people because He had courage and he stands up straight and tall. Everything counts with Moses. He has capacity for the love of God and he expresses this attitude from his soul.

Moses prays for God's power to be great. He asks for forgiveness.

Num 14:20: [And Jehovah said, I have pardoned according to your word.](#)

Doctrine from the mind of God is in Moses and God throws it right back to him. The Lord responds to his own Word. God cannot go back on His Word. We have God's Word in writing. If our prayer life is effective, it is based upon the doctrine in our souls and faith rest.

Num. 14:16–45 Faith rest Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #13 circa 5/21/69

They have had opportunity for taking in Bible doctrine, but they have rejected it; they have begun to build scar tissue inside the soul. Dathan and Abram revolt. Every passage seems to have a reference to a mental attitude sins. Before you can build scar tissue on the right bank, you must first build scar tissue on the left bank. Caleb and Joshua are the two exceptions. Bible doctrine is found in the Word of God, which lives and abides forever. There is Bible doctrine in the Word. It must go from the Word to the human spirit, where it is stored, and where there are pipes going into the left bank of the soul. David said, "My soul breathes." The soul has lungs. God is behind a curtain. Man is born with an old sin nature, which means spiritual death; and God is behind this curtain. We cannot see God understand God or know anything about God. However, when we believe in Jesus Christ, we are given the means by which this curtain may be drawn back. When we learn Bible doctrine, it comes into the soul. Bible doctrine in the soul is the only place where it does us any good. Our eyes of the soul see God; Bible doctrine in the soul. God becomes real. This is the capacity to love God, cat. #1. God has revealed Himself and it is impossible to see God or to love God without having doctrine in the soul.

For the typical believer, there is no doctrine in the soul; there is scar tissue on his soul. When this scar tissue begins to form, these all block up and in each place there is a pipe called vanity, but it is a vacuum. In these pipes there is darkness which is sucked in. Darkness is sucked into the soul; legalism, religion, emphasis on the details of life, mental attitude sins which produce self-induced misery; common cultural human viewpoint ideas. Doctrine is blocked. Since doctrine is blocked, there is a believer with a soul in the dark. Therefore, he does not have the capacity to love God or to see God. Once you get darkness on that side, you will get it on the other side. 10 men went into the land. They looked at the giants and the only thing which came into their souls was darkness. When they saw the giants and the armaments and they were frightened. They were upset; they were disturbed; and they could not go into the land. There is no longer any reason for you to live. You only get human viewpoint and false doctrine piped into the soul. Total hardness of heart.

Judas Iscariot was an unbeliever and he built up scar tissue. Judas, when he took the sop from Jesus, accepted the sop but not Jesus Christ. So Satan can live in total darkness and he lived in Judas, as he covered up his soul in complete darkness.

That entire generation would be wiped out. Now and again there will be a generation of believers wiped out due to scar tissue of the soul. You can be covered up with so much scar tissue that it will take you 5 years to breathe it off. Rebound will not removed scar tissue.

Bob is at a crossroads in his ministry. A whole generation from his church is going negative toward doctrine. When you begin building up scar tissue, you have had it. Berachah used to have a large group who were interested in doctrine and they are going negative. A lot of people have no interest in Bible doctrine at Berachah. Whatever the reason, no inhale, no exhale. You build up scar tissue and then you say you are getting back to Bible class. It requires a crash program to breathe off all the scar tissue. Bob gets out to the west coast and cannot believe the weirdo things out there. Bob told them about smog-bound California and that they could have it. He told them it is the exhale from fuzzy thinking.

This is what happened to that generation of believers. There are people in California who used to be very interested in doctrine; but now they aren't. It is like getting out of shape and then trying to get back into shape. Bob had 30 days to get back into running the quarter mile. He ran a 50 second quarter mile and he was almost dead after that; didn't feel right for a couple days and sick for an hour. You don't get in shape in 30 days and run something like that. It is a hard road back. Once you get stiff, you don't ever want to exercise again. That is the deal with scar tissue; you have in inhale and exhale. God brought them to the land and they did not go in because they were negative toward Bible doctrine.

Joshua and Caleb were free from scar tissue of the soul and they were ready to go in. The giants were nothing to them. The other ten were covered with scar tissue; they wept all night. They were born-again, but they knew nothing about God.

Num 14:16–20: [Because Jehovah was not able to bring this people into the land which He swore to them, therefore He has slain them in the wilderness. And now, I beseech You, let the power of my Lord be great, according as You have spoken, saying, Jehovah is long-suffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression, and by no means clearing the guilty, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the sons to the third and fourth generation. I beseech You, pardon the iniquity of this people according to the greatness of Your mercy, and as You have forgiven this people from Egypt even until now. And Jehovah said, I have pardoned according to your word.](#)

They lacked doctrine, and they were negative toward God. There was only one way to keep their appetures clear, which involved learning doctrine each and every day. When they hit maximum scar tissue, out they go. The 10 spies who brought in the majority report would all die right here in the passage; the rest through the next 39 years.

Negative volition builds up scar tissue; so the parents do not teach the parents. This goes on for 3 generations and then God stops it. They build up their own scar tissue and it lasts 3 generations.

This was Bible class from a few weeks ago.

They have been exposed to doctrine, but they have been negative toward doctrine. Hearing is a means of learning, but hearing is not learning. They provoke God by building up scar tissue. There is an exception.

Num 14:21–24: But truly, as I live, all the earth shall be filled with the glory of Jehovah. Because all those men who have seen My glory and My miracles which I did in Egypt and in the wilderness, and have tempted Me now these ten times, and have not listened to My voice, surely they shall not see the land which I swore to their fathers, neither shall any of them that provoked Me see it. But My servant Caleb, because he had another spirit with him, and has followed Me fully, I will bring him into the land into which he went. And his seed shall possess it.

Caleb had a large closet; every day, he takes in doctrine. He is occupied with Christ; emotion—he has a love for God; conscience—he has the norms and standards to take the land. Caleb had another spirit in him.

Num 14:25–27: (Now the Amalekites and the Canaanites lived in the valley.) Tomorrow turn and go into the wilderness by the way of the Red Sea. And Jehovah spoke to Moses and to Aaron, saying, How long shall I bear with this evil congregation, which murmurs against Me? I have heard the murmurings of the sons of Israel which they murmur against Me.

When you build up scar tissue on the soul, you murmur against God.

Num 14:28–33: Say to them, As I live, says Jehovah, as you have spoken in My ears, so I will do to you. Your dead bodies shall fall in this wilderness, and all that were numbered of you, according to your whole number, from twenty years old and upward, who have murmured against Me, you shall certainly not come into the land which I swore to make you live in, except Caleb the son of Jephunneh, and Joshua the son of Nun. But your little ones, which you said should be a prey, I will bring them in and they shall know the land which you have despised. But as for you, your bodies shall fall in this wilderness. And your sons shall feed in the wilderness forty years and bear your fornications, until your dead bodies have wasted in the wilderness.

Then God lays out those who would die.

Num 14:34–35: According to the number of the days in which you searched the land, forty days, each day for a year you shall bear your iniquities, forty years; and you shall know My alienation. I Jehovah have spoken; I will surely do it to all this evil congregation who are gathered together against Me. They shall be destroyed in this wilderness, and there they shall die.

Joshua and Caleb would make it.

Deut. 6:4: **Hear, O, Israel. Jehovah our God is one Jehovah.** This is something which the Jews use in their worship. It only means something if you are born again and your left bank is without scar tissue.

You cannot exhale unless you first inhale. Christianity today is messed up because there is exhale without inhale. When you vomit, you exhale without inhaling. That is the exception.

Deut. 6:5 **And you shall love Jehovah your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your might.** With your soul you can love God. Doctrine has to come in so that you can exhale love toward Him.

Deut. 6:6–9: **And these words which I command you this day shall be in your heart. And you shall carefully teach them to your sons, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house and when you walk by the way, and when you lie down, and when you rise up. And you shall bind them for a sign upon your hand, and they shall be as frontlets between your eyes. And you shall write them upon the posts of your house, and on your gates.**

The teaching is to be done diligently to the sons; there is scar tissue on the souls of the parents. This can be taught to the children because they do not have the scar tissue.

Deut. 6:20–25: **When your son asks you in time to come, saying, What are the testimonies, and the statutes and the judgments which Jehovah our God has commanded you? Then you shall say to your son, We were Pharaoh's slaves in Egypt, and Jehovah brought us out of Egypt with a mighty hand. And Jehovah gave signs and wonders, great and evil signs, upon Egypt, upon Pharaoh and upon all his household, before our eyes. And He brought us out from there so that He might bring us in to give us the land which He swore to our fathers. And Jehovah commanded us to do all these statutes, to fear Jehovah our God, for our good always, so that He might preserve us alive, as it is today. And if we are careful to do all this commandment before Jehovah our God, as He has commanded us, it shall be our righteousness.**

Deut. 8:1–3: **All the commandments which I command you this day shall you be careful to do, that you may live and multiply and go in and possess the land which Jehovah swore to your fathers. And you shall remember all the way which Jehovah your God led you these forty years in the wilderness in order to humble you, to prove you, to know what is in your heart, whether you would keep His commandments or not. And He humbled [orient them to grace] you and allowed you to hunger, and then He fed you with manna, which you did not know, neither did your fathers know it, so that He might make you know that man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that comes out of the mouth of Jehovah man shall live.**

Deut. 8:11, 14: **Beware that you do not forget Jehovah your God, in not keeping His commandments, and His judgments, and His statutes, which I command you today,...then**

your heart might be lifted up, and you might forget Jehovah your God who brought you forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of slaves.

Bob knew the giver and knew when to ask and when not to. Bible doctrine pulls back the curtain so that we can know Him. It must be Bible doctrine from the spirit which is transferred over to the soul in the exhale. This is the importance of knowing doctrine.

Num. 14:31–33: *But your little ones, which you said should be a prey, I will bring them in and they shall know the land which you have despised. But as for you, your bodies shall fall in this wilderness. And your sons shall feed in the wilderness forty years and bear your fornications, until your dead bodies have wasted in the wilderness.*

God's postponement (not breach)) of promise.

Num 14:34–35: *According to the number of the days in which you searched the land, forty days, each day for a year you shall bear your iniquities, forty years; and you shall know My alienation. I Jehovah have spoken; I will surely do it to all this evil congregation who are gathered together against Me. They shall be destroyed in this wilderness, and there they shall die.*

Culture, theories, concepts, religion, legalism, etc. gets sucked into a dark soul. This is why religion is called a prostitute. The whore of Babylon. Religion in the soul means that you are unfaithful to God. When you become religious, you can accept almost anything. For money, a whore can accept anyone, but never be faithful to anyone. Once scar tissue forms, metiotês opens up and pulls in human viewpoint.

Num 14:36–37: *And the men whom Moses sent to spy out the land, who returned and made all the congregation to murmur against him, by bringing up an evil report upon the land, even those men that brought up the evil report upon the land died by the plague before Jehovah.*

Whatever the plague was, took these faithless men out immediately.

Now, back in v. 1, they wept all night; and now they mourn.

Num 14:38–39: *But Joshua the son of Nun, and Caleb the son of Jephunneh, of the men that went to spy out the land, lived. And Moses told these sayings to all the sons of Israel. And the people mourned greatly.*

Their souls are in darkness, but they are now sorry for what they have done, having seen the men die.

They feel remorse for crying and repentance.

Num 14:40–45: *And they rose up early in the morning and went up to the top of the mountain, saying, Lo, we are here, and will go up to the place which Jehovah has promised, for we have sinned. And Moses said, Why do you now go beyond the command of Jehovah,*

since it shall not be blessed? Do not go up, for Jehovah is not among you. And shall you not be beaten before your enemies? For the Amalekites and the Canaanites are there before you, and you shall fall by the sword. Because you have turned away from Jehovah, therefore Jehovah will not be with you. But they presumed to go up to the hill top. But the ark of the covenant of Jehovah, and Moses, did not leave the camp. And the Amalekites and the Canaanites who were living in that mountain came down and struck them, and beat them down, to Hormah.

They are charging up the mountain with souls of scar tissue. They rebound and they are even in fellowship; but they are fellowship with scar tissue. God does not use scar tissue types. Rebound will not remove scar tissue; it merely gets you back into fellowship.

Moses asks them about transgressing the Lord. He tells them not to go up and tells them that the Lord is not with them. You can rebound until you are blue in the face; but in between, you need to learn a little doctrine. Sincerity will not carry you 5 steps up the hill.

Moses and the Ark of the Covenant stayed in the camp.

Hiphil imperfect of yakum which is a form of nakah, which means *to slay, to defeat*; Hiphil stem means *they were caused to be defeated*. The next word is yakthum which is the Hiphil imperfect of kathath which means *to be cut off*; in the Hiphil, *to be routed*. They were clobbered but good. They were doing what they should have done because of scar tissue. It is possible to do the right thing but not get anywhere. The key is learning doctrine. Knowledge of doctrine is the key. We learn doctrine to apply to experience, and have a right relationship with God.

Let's say we have 50% scar tissue on the soul, which requires intake and output in order to open up the soul so that the eyes can see God. You need Bible doctrine in order to see God. Without doctrine, you are a spiritual baby in fellowship. If you want someone to carry the ball, you don't get a 3 year old, but a strong, tough 20 year old. These are not tough men; they cried and wailed all night. They are filled with emotionalism and they are sincere; but they are loaded up with scar tissue. Scar tissue types do not go anywhere. Best place for a scar tissue type is to take in doctrine regularly. Doctrine needs to be a crash program. Some people need to stop doing everything and to take in Bible doctrine. They need to get the Word until they clear up the scar tissue. One year without scar tissue is equivalent to 40 years with scar tissue. If you have scar tissue on your soul, do not witness to 10 people a day; keep your mouth shut. God does not think in terms of doing.

Choose between the right woman for you over against a woman who could cook, clean, and was talented and made \$100,000 a year on the side. If you have any intelligence, you take the rw. It is not a matter of doing, it is a matter of wooing, which comes from Bible doctrine. Scar tissue on the soul makes the faith rest technique impossible.

Jos 14:6–8: *Then the sons of Judah came to Joshua in Gilgal. And Caleb, the son of Jephunneh the Kenizzite, said to him, You know the thing that Jehovah said to Moses the man of God in Kadesh-barnea regarding you and me. I was forty years old when Moses the servant*

of Jehovah sent me from Kadesh-barnea to spy out the land. And I brought him word again as it was in my heart. But my brothers that went up with me made the heart of the people melt; yet I fully followed Jehovah my God.

Heart here is the eyes of the soul. As he went through the land, he evaluated everything from the standpoint of doctrine. He sees giants, and he thinks, good, we'll whip them. He sees the walls of the city, and thinks, fine, we will tear them down.

Caleb was getting his land, which Moses had promised and the Lord had kept him alive. Not some system or some gimmick. Caleb was kept alive because he had no scar tissue on the soul. He kept taking in doctrine every day.

Caleb was 40 when he faced the land and wanted to go in; and now, he is 85, after 5 years of campaigning in the land. There were some jebusites that were not whipped. Caleb served until everything that was taken. Now, he asked to be able to take the land of the giants. He has no scar tissue on the left bank of the soul and he sees the Lord everyday.

Joshua 14:9–12: And Moses swore on that day, saying, Surely the land on which your feet have trodden shall be your inheritance, and your sons' forever because you have fully followed Jehovah my God. And now, behold, Jehovah has kept me alive these forty-five years as He said, even since Jehovah spoke this word to Moses, while Israel wandered in the wilderness. And now, lo, I am eighty-five years old today. As yet I am as strong today as I was in the day that Moses sent me. As my strength was then, even so is my strength now, for war, both to go out and to come in. And now give me this mountain of which Jehovah spoke on that day. For you heard in that day how the giants were there, and that the cities were great and fortified. If Jehovah will be with me, then I will be able to drive them out, as Jehovah said.

Joshua 15:14: And Caleb drove out from there the three sons of Anak, Sheshai, and Ahiman, and Talmi, the sons of Anak.

At 85, Caleb went up and clobbered the giants and they were no match for one believer free from scar tissue on the soul.

Ex. 14:12 3 Water Tests Basic Bible Doctrine Lesson #14 circa 5/28/69

We've already seen a breakdown of the faith rest technique in Num. 13–14. Basically, the faith rest technique is claiming a promise or a principle, and you face the situation from the divine viewpoint.

You cannot exhale unless you first inhale; the inhale is Bible doctrine. Moses was the greatest teacher of the Old Testament; and one of the greatest teachers of all time, along with Paul. He apparently taught the children of Israel daily.

3 categories of believers: those who did not come to Moses' Bible class; those who came but did not get anything (they listened but did not learn); those who desired a relationship

with the Lord above all else and were therefore on positive volition toward doctrine, and you could count these on the fingers of two hands. Moses, Caleb, Joshua, and Ethiopian woman, Bob has a whole series on the Ethiopian woman. She caused Miriam to become a leper out of jealousy. Mental attitude sins just don't pay. She was jealous of Moses' second wife. Aaron had to be there and he must have learned something. He was a mouse, and after some attendance at Moses' Bible classes, you might even call him a mighty mouse. Moses was the best trained, finest Bible teacher and of all the Old Testament, and these clucks were not interested. It is one thing to be saved and another thing to love the Lord and respond to His love for us. That is what is wrong with these people; they did not want to know God.

When they made a golden calf, Moses melted it down and mixed the dust with water, and made them drink it. There were many tests in the first year of the exodus. For 300 years the Jews had been saying, "If we were only free, we'd be happy." Some may have said, "The Egyptians can travel all over, and we would feel better if we could travel." Or they might be concerned over the houses or chariots of the Egyptians; and many of them no doubt said, "If I only had this or that, I would be happy." Traveling salesmen, their idea of happiness is to move to one place and to never move around again; but to someone else, they think traveling all around would be great.

Or you want to meet new people, and you meet new unhappy friends, so you move around to meet others. You can have a relationship with God and be in a bed all the rest of your life; you can travel or not travel; you can be confined to a wheel chair, no matter what the circumstance, you can be happy with your relationship with God.

Thieme thinks the moon is the most boring place in the world and only good for setting up weapons.

We have a whole generation of young people with time and freedom and they do not know what to do with these things. Without doctrine, you are not going to have inner happiness. The inhale is Bible doctrine and the exhale includes love toward God and faith rest. If you love God, then you depend upon Him; He has promises and principles and we can claim these. This is what Moses tried to tell the Jews. We suffer for blessing, we suffer for discipline and we suffer for faith rest. We suffer so that we can keep our soul in shape. When we inhale this doctrine and get into adversity, and Bible doctrine makes it possible to deal with the adversity. Or, we get into a hopeless situation, and all we can do is exhale in the hands of God. We may use His promises and we may use His thinking; and if we know enough doctrine, we will use His person (which isn't for very many). That requires a capacity for love that most people do not have. You have to be consistent, which is about the most difficult thing for a person not in uniform. Bob is in favor of universal military training, even if all they do is close order drill for 3 years. It is important to be consistent in the Word of God.

God will have a number of tests and 3 of these tests are water tests.

1. Too much water: the Red Sea.

2. Wrong kind of water.
3. No water.

Each test is different, but the test is solved the same way. Faith rest. People get out of spiritual breath when they cry or fall apart. They murmur and complain, and now we know they are not faith resting it.

Pharaoh rejected God's Word. He was negative volition toward God's Word. You build up scar tissue on the left bank first. God dealt with pharaoh with several miracles, but he was negative toward God Himself; he does not need the Jews but he wants them back when he cut them lose. As soon as the plague was removed, he said, "No, I won't let them go." He appeared to acquiesce, and then he turns around and says no, and that is implacability.

Israel went out with a high hand, meaning that they thought if all they did was take off and have freedom, that would take care of everything.

Marriage is a series of new problems and it requires a whole lot of things to make it work. Some think that marriage will make them happy forever. It takes a lot of maturity and soul breathing to make it work, plus getting the right one in the first place. Just as getting married will not make you happy, so getting out of Egypt would not make the Jews happy.

Ex. 14:8: [And Jehovah hardened the heart of Pharaoh king of Egypt. And he pursued the sons of Israel, and the sons of Israel went out with a high hand.](#)

The gift can only be enjoyed if you appreciate the giver. This is why believers cannot enjoy so many spiritual blessings. Almost all believers want to be happy; but they never think about the source of happiness. You cannot just be happy because you want to be happy. Bible doctrine focuses your attention of the giver so that you can appreciate the gift. Bible doctrine focuses you on the Lord, so that you can appreciate freedom (in this instance). If you enjoy God by means of doctrine, whatever He gives you, you can be happy.

In this situation, we find out that the Jews have too much water and they are unhappy. God gives some an Isetta (a 3 wheeled car) and we are disappointed because he expected a cadillac. The reason we are disappointed with a gift because we do not love the giver or we have no capacity to love the giver. You expected a full-length mink and you got a full-length muskrat or rabbit or whatever; but you just did not care for the giver. If you love God, you will be happy with what He provides.

Ex. 14:9–10: [But the Egyptians pursued them, all the horses and chariots of Pharaoh, and his horsemen, and his army. And they overtook them camping by the sea, beside Pihahiroth, before Baal-zephon. And Pharaoh drew near, the sons of Israel lifted up their eyes. And, behold, the Egyptians marched after them. And they were very afraid. And the sons of Israel cried out to Jehovah.](#)

They are given freedom, but they will have to fight for it. And they see Pharaoh's hoards coming and they say, "I'm a lover, not a fighter." They went out with a high hand and that means they found something that they thought would make you happy, but you have no capacity to love the giver. **They were sore afraid.**

Out of your soul and into words comes their cry; and they cried out to the Lord. It sounds like they are crying out for help, but they are blaming Him. "Now, look at the mess you got me into."

Ex. 14:11: **And they said to Moses, Have you taken us away to die in the wilderness because there were no graves in Egypt? Why have you dealt this way with us, to carry us forth out of Egypt?**

Do you see how irrational this is? They have marched by all these pyramids which are giant rock tombs and Egypt is filled with them. They were bitter and implacable. And now, where is their high hand? They thought they would be happy forever until the first test comes along.

Maybe the last time you were under pressure, you thought about all the times you sang in church or all the parties you went to and all of your friends. If you did not have doctrine breathing out toward God, you were miserable.

They are complaining that God took them out of Egypt. "It was the plan of God, you clucks."

Ex. 14:12: **Did we not tell you this word in Egypt, saying, Let us alone, so that we may serve the Egyptians? For it would have been better for us to serve the Egyptians, than that we should die in the wilderness.**

Negative volition toward doctrine, and this is the utterance of believers with scar tissue on the soul. They say it is better to serve the Egyptians than to die out in the desert wilderness. To go to the land, you must go through the desert and in the desert you get the testing to appreciate the Land of Promise. You learn to breathe and appreciate God in the desert. The land is filled with good things. But you cannot enjoy good things until you go through the desert.

God put them out in the desert so that they could get Bible doctrine. There is nothing going on; they are stuck out in the desert with nothing to do but go to Bible class. This is a perfect place to learn faith rest.

Ex. 14:13–14: **And Moses said to the people, Do not fear. Stand still and see the salvation of Jehovah, which He will prepare for you this day. For the Egyptians whom you have seen today, you shall never see them anymore. Jehovah shall fight for you, and you shall be silent.**

Moses tells them not to fear and to stand still. That means they do not have to do a thing. Just stand still and see the deliverance of the Lord. Deliverance of the Lord is occupation which His person. Once you have your eyes on God and love toward Him, deliverance is not an issue; it is watching through the eyes of the soul. Knowing the Deliverer is more important than the deliverance. Knowing the Deliverer is the trust in God.

They will sing an anthem. However, after singing this anthem, but they will fall flat on their faces in the next chapter. It means nothing to sing or to be a bundle of emotion, and then you fall apart at the next crisis.

The writer of *I'm in the Mood for Love* died this day. Only daily intake of Bible doctrine gives us the capacity to love God. This is why Caleb and Joshua were ready to go into the land. They had their eyes on God, so that it was easy to determine what to do.

The others were cutting Bible class and fiddling around the desert—whatever people do—and they had no capacity to love God.

Ex. 14:19–23: And the Angel of God, the one who went before the camp of Israel, moved. And he went to the rear of them. And the pillar of the cloud went from in front of their face and it stood behind them.

Exo 14:20 And it came between the camp of the Egyptians and the camp of Israel. And it was a cloudy and dark night, but it lit up the night, so that the one did not come near the other all night.

Exo 14:21 And Moses stretched out his hand over the sea. And Jehovah caused the sea to recede by a strong east wind all that night, and made the sea dry land, and the waters were divided.

Exo 14:22 And the sons of Israel went into the midst of the sea upon the dry ground. And the waters were a wall to them on their right hand and on their left.

Exo 14:23 And the Egyptians pursued and went after them to the middle of the sea, all Pharaoh's horses, his chariots, and his horsemen.

Ex. 14:29–31: But the sons of Israel walked upon dry land in the middle of the sea. And the waters were a wall to them on their right hand and on their left.

Exo 14:30 So Jehovah saved Israel that day out of the hand of the Egyptians. And Israel saw the Egyptians dead upon the seashore.

Exo 14:31 And Israel saw that great work which Jehovah did upon the Egyptians. And the people feared Jehovah, and believed Jehovah and His servant Moses.

They see the Lord's deliverance with their eyes, but not with their thinking.

Then they sing a song to God. Very inspirational.

Ex. 15:22–23: [And Moses brought Israel from the Red Sea, and they went out into the wilderness of Shur. And they went three days in the wilderness, and found no water. And when they came to Marah, they could not drink of the waters of Marah, because it was bitter. Therefore the name of it was called Marah.](#)

Bitterness of the soul. The water is bitter; they need it; they cannot drink it because it is bitter. Marah means *bitterness*. They are disappointed; the water cannot be drunk. They are in a jam again. If their eyes were on God, then they just had to wait on His deliverance. The song was probably very moving and quite emotional; but it does not carry them anywhere. They taste bad water and they begin to complain.

Ex. 15:24–27: *And the people murmured against Moses, saying, What shall we drink? And he cried to Jehovah. And Jehovah showed him a tree. And when he had cast it into the waters, the waters were made sweet. There He made a decree and a law for them, and there He tested them. And he said, If you will carefully listen to the voice of Jehovah your God, and will do that which is right in His sight, and will give ear to His commandments, and keep all His Laws, I will put none of these diseases upon you, which I have brought upon the Egyptians; for I am Jehovah who heals you. And they came to Elim, where there were twelve wells of water, and seventy palm trees. And they camped there by the waters.*

There is a tree growing by the water in Psalm 1 which teaches one thing. The tree is here right next to the water, and it is almost ready to fall into the water. It is already a log. All they need to do is give it a touch and in it goes. This is apparently a very large lake. Marah means bitter. We all have bitter experiences.

When the tree goes into the water, the water becomes sweet. The tree turns the water from bitter to sweetness. The tree is association with the bitterness and what comes out of it is living water.

I am the Lord Who heals you; I will not put these diseases upon you.

The first they see next is 70 trees and 12 wells of water, one for each tribe. There will be others to help Moses to communicate the Word and there will be doctrine available.

Ex. 17:1–3: *And all the congregation of the sons of Israel journeyed from the wilderness of Sin, after their journeys, according to the command of the Lord, and pitched in Rephidim. And there was no water for the people to drink. And the people wrangled with Moses and said, Give us water that we may drink. And Moses said to them, Why do you wrangle with me? Why do you tempt Jehovah? And the people thirsted there for water. And the people murmured against Moses and said, Why is this, that You brought us up out of Egypt, to kill us and our sons and our cattle with thirst?*

Rephidim means *refreshments*. But there is no water. God says that this is refreshment, then we know it is refreshment. Instead of saying, “Thank you, Father; we will just watch to see how You are going to deal with this.” Instead, they complain to Moses and tempt the Lord. You think with their dry throats they would shut up, but they murmur and complain. It is amazing what people will do with scar tissue. When you have scar tissue on the soul, it is not unreasonable at all. They did not have any exhale to God, so when something went wrong, they complained to God. They are sarcastic with Moses and they accuse him of trying to kill them.

Obviously Moses was not taking them out to kill them there, and yet they complain about that. It does not take much scar tissue to be very unreasonable. Like there is some plot.

Ex. 17:4–7: And Moses cried to Jehovah, saying, What shall I do to this people? They are almost ready to stone me. And Jehovah said to Moses, Go on in front of the people, and take with you the elders of Israel. And take your rod with which you struck the river, in your hand, and go. Behold, I will stand before you there upon the rock in Horeb. And you shall smite the rock, and there shall come water out of it, so that the people may drink. And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel. And he called the name of the place Massah, and Meribah, because of the wrangling of the sons of Israel, and because they tempted Jehovah, saying, Is Jehovah among us or not?

The people call the place *testing* and *complaining*. God tells Moses to get out in front of them, where he would be a great target for being stoned by them.

Deut. 1:19: And when we pulled up stakes from Horeb, we went through all that great and terrible wilderness which you saw by the way of the mountain of the Amorites, as Jehovah our God commanded us. And we came to Kadesh-barnea.

God designs a year for them to learn and to test their faith, to get ready to go into the land; and they reject God over and over again. If you get the land you will not enjoy it if you do not appreciate the Giver. You need the relationship to appreciate God. The Jews, if they went into the land, and there was nothing to prepare them, they would never appreciate it. Without capacity, no matter what you get, you will never appreciate it.

Everyone wants something. Some just keep coming to Bible class just to get something. God holds up giving us things until we have the capacity to appreciate it. The measure is our capacity to love God. It is based on inhale Bible doctrine, exhale faith rest, capacity to love God.

Every day in the desert they had Bible class and they could have appreciated God. They came to a mountain range, and they are bivouacked below, and Moses tells them that on the other side of the mountain is the land God has given them.

Deut. 1:20–22, 25–27: And I said to you, You have come to the mountain of the Amorites, which Jehovah our God has given unto us. Behold, Jehovah your God has set the land before you. Go up. Possess it, even as Jehovah, the God of your fathers has said to you. Do not fear, neither be troubled. And you came near to me, every one of you, and said, We will send men before us, and they shall search out the land and bring us word again by what way we must go up, and into what cities we shall come. And they took of the fruit of the land in their hands, and brought it down to us, and brought us word again and said, It is a good land which Jehovah our God gives us. But you would not go up, but rebelled against the command of Jehovah your God. And you murmured in your tents and said, Because Jehovah hates us, He has brought us forth out of the land of Egypt to deliver us into the hand of the Amorites, to destroy us.

And they claimed the Lord hated them, and there was no reason for this. They have gone through this terrible desert and they do not recognize Who God is. Then they, after a year, say, "Moses, you brought us here to let the Amorites kill us." There is nothing more unreasonable than a believer with scar tissue on the soul. "The Lord hates us!" It makes a lot of sense.

Deut. 1:28–33: Where shall we go up? Our brothers have broken our heart, saying, We have seen there a people greater and taller than we are. The cities are great and walled up to the heavens, also the sons of the giants. Then I said to you, Do not dread them nor be afraid of them. Jehovah your God who goes before you shall fight for you, according to all that He did for you in Egypt before your eyes, and in the wilderness where you have seen how Jehovah your God carried you, as a man carries his son, in all the way that you went until you came into this place. Yet in this thing you did not believe Jehovah your God, who went in the way before you to search you out a place to pitch your tents, in fire by night, to show you by what way you should go, and in a cloud by day.

God carried you like a man carries his son. This is a picture of what God did for them. The son is young; no capacity to love. The man carries the son. Behind that, the father loves his child and is happy to carry his child. The father doesn't hate his child; he loves his child. There is a relationship established here. Your intake of doctrine and your exhale of faith rest. There was no exhale of faith. They could not exhale faith because they did not inhale doctrine.

Deut 1:35–39: Surely there shall not one of these men of this evil generation see that good land, which I swore to give to your fathers, except Caleb the son of Jephunneh; he shall see it, and to him I will give the land that he has trodden upon, and to his sons, because he has fully followed Jehovah. Also Jehovah was angry with me for your sakes, saying, You also shall not go in there. Joshua the son of Nun, who stands before you, he shall go in there. Make him strong, for he shall cause Israel to inherit it. And your little ones, who you said would be a prey, and your sons who in that day had no knowledge between good and evil, they shall go in there. And I will give it to them, and they shall possess it.

Their children had no knowledge at that time. God does not hold them responsible.

Deut. 1:41: And you answered and said to me, We have sinned against Jehovah; **we will** go up and fight according to all that Jehovah our God commanded us. And when each one of you had buckled on his weapons of war, you were ready to go up into the hill.

They are in fellowship with scar tissue. They could have desired for Moses to teach them for a year so that they could go up that mountain. Rebound does not remove scar tissue; it gives you the means to learn doctrine. After they rebounded.

There was plenty of time. God gave them 39 more years. At any point, they could have recovered and entered into the land.

It is typical for believers to rebound; but they never follow up with Bible class to breathe away that scar tissue. A year from now, they could have been freed of scar tissue and gone up and clobbered the Amorites. You cannot march up that hill with scar tissue of the soul. This is the story of how they were defeated.

Deut. 1:42–46: But Jehovah said to me, Say to them, Do not go up, nor fight, for I am not among you, you will be beaten by your enemies. So I spoke to you. And you would not hear, but rebelled against the command of Jehovah, and went presumptuously into the hill. And the Amorites who lived in that mountain came out against you and chased you, even as bees do, and destroyed you in Seir, to Hormah. And you returned and wept before Jehovah. But Jehovah would not listen to your voice, nor give ear to you. So you stayed in Kadesh many days, according to the days that you remained.

They go up without the Lord. “I spoke to you, but you would not hear.” They went up presumptuously, which means that they went up the hill without God. It was not God’s timing; they were not ready to execute the spiritual life without God and doctrine in their souls.

After they were whipped, they sat down and cried. God would not listen to them. You cannot talk to God through scar tissue and you cannot talk to God through out of fellowship.

Conclusion

1. People with scar tissue cannot inherit the land. The land is perfect and from God.
2. The land is perfect, but you cannot enjoy it without the means of enjoying it.
3. The plan of God for phase II is doctrine. The plan of God for phase II is to take the land. You cannot enjoy phase II with scar tissue on the soul.
4. Only the daily intake of Bible doctrine + the exhale of faith rest toward God will provide enjoyment for the land.
5. In eternity past, God designed a land for us. God provided a land flowing with milk and honey in eternity past; He provides a perfect plan for phase II and we have the land; all we have to do is go and take it.
6. But you cannot enjoy the land which God has provided without inhale Bible doctrine. Even though it is there; even though it is provided for us.
7. Bible doctrine is capacity to love God and the appreciator of what God gives us. Actually, what God has given us, as He gave this to us in eternity past.

This is all analogous to us in the spiritual life.

Lesson #15

Faith rest Basic Bible Doctrine Num. 20:1

circa 6/4/69

One of the 5 basic techniques of operation phase II. Because of scar tissue on the soul, they were not qualified to go into the land, and one generation was removed from the scene before they move forward.

Exhale is designed to develop the proper attitude toward God.

Num 20:1: [And the people of Israel, the whole congregation, came into the wilderness of Zin in the first month, and the people stayed in Kadesh. And Miriam died there and was buried there.](#)

The death of Miriam marks the end of the first generation of believers.

Dr. Denton Cooley performed a new heart transplant; and someone was playing "The Origin of the Soul" on a tape and he came in and listened and he brought several people in to listen; Bob says 15 other doctors.

The faith rest technique is the basic exhale of the left bank of the soul toward God. Exhale of faith rest on this side (which one?) handles no-water situations, e.g. the one they are facing here. If you have doctrine in the soul, the exhale of that doctrine will be from the soul. Apparently, you are exhaling toward God on one side and toward the situation on the other. The problem may be hopeless, but so what? A no-water situation is not a problem for God. Every time that we have a problem or a pressure, God is making love to us, if our volition becomes involved.

A lot of men have never learned; a man initiates love toward a woman and she has no interest in him, after the second time he needs to move on. He recognizes everything but the volition of the woman involved. A smart man puts a lot of distance between himself and negative volition. Our positive volition is expressed by our daily intake of the Word of God. The exhale toward God is faith rest; and the exhale toward the no water situation is faith rest. Faith rest is designed towards God, but you still have to deal with the hopeless situation.

There is no hopeless situation with God. God initiates love toward the believer. Negative volition starts in with mental attitude sins, which are expressed by murmuring. You might call that a heart murmur.

God knew about this no-water situation from eternity past. The exhale of darkness is the expression of a mental attitude sins.

Num 20:2 [Now there was no water for the congregation. And they assembled themselves together against Moses and against Aaron.](#)

Moses and Aaron represent the entire teaching of doctrine to these people. These people are going to make a decision and that decision is to revolt. They have scar tissue and they have the mental attitude sins giving them the motivation to revolt.

People seem to want to cling to life until they get scar tissue all over the soul, and that gives them disorientation to life and they go into wide emotional swings. They get into hedonism, trying to find as much pleasure as possible in life. They have made the other wide emotional swing to, "We just want to die." They do not have enough sense to think,

I wonder how God is going to handle this problem? The problem is, they have darkness in the soul. Any exhale they have toward God.

Consistent inconsistency: it is consistent with their unhappiness that they want to die; and consistent with their anger to want to kill Moses and Aaron.

Num 20:3–5: [And the people quarreled with Moses and said, "Would that we had perished when our brothers perished before the LORD! Why have you brought the assembly of the LORD into this wilderness, that we should die here, both we and our cattle? And why have you made us come up out of Egypt to bring us to this evil place? It is no place for grain or figs or vines or pomegranates, and there is no water to drink."](#)

Everything is the fault of Moses and Aaron; they made the people come out of the desert. You can never malign grace without maligning God. Grace is the expression of the grace of God. He expresses Himself in the human race. Grace cannot be distorted. Grace is the expression of God's character. People can be distorted and souls can be distorted, but grace cannot. It is always the distorted soul which maligns the grace of God.

They have self-pity, mental attitude sins, they are emotionally unstable with wide emotional swings, and in their conscience, they have strictly human viewpoint, thinking of Egypt as a wonderful place. They are thinking of the details of life. In other words, you can think just like them without being in the desert of Zin. All you have to do is think that the details of life will bring you happiness. When you get self-pity, then you want to die. You have mental attitude sins and you want to hurt someone else, which means you need to stay alive long enough to kill them. What is real to these people? No water and no Egypt. That is what is real to them. Egypt is a place where they have pomegranates.

A lot of people get negative toward doctrine and they think of something that they liked before, and they return to it and they find that they do not have any real happiness there. You compare the hopeless situation to God and you decide, based upon that, which is strongest. Through adversity, God demonstrates His love toward us on this earth. This is the only time God can express His love toward us in adversity.

These things become real in our lives and the next time a no-water situation comes our way, it is no big deal, as we have faced that sort of situation before. Every time we face a no water situation, we can deal with it. When we face a difficult situation, do we look toward God or do we look toward Egypt? If all the magicians and the pharaoh and anyone else in Egypt came out to desert, they could not provide water for these people.

Some think the great thing is that God bailed us out of a tough situation, but the great thing is what God is to us. It isn't the provision; the big thing is Who and What God is and we love Him because of Who and What He is. If you simply love someone for what they do for you, you are on shaky ground. You have to love them for who they are. If you simply love those who live you because of what you do for them, someone right around the corner can provide much more. When love is based upon occupation with the person, then it is

love. God has not trouble providing water. It isn't water which is difficult, it is that He has all of this doctrine and all these promises, and these people are negative toward Him. He does not switch their volition. Unless it comes from a person's free will it is meaningless.

God from His free will has chosen to love us. He has chosen to love us with a maximum love. God has done a tremendous thing for us. We get there by intake of Bible doctrine. Inhale Bible doctrine and exhale faith rest. We have our choice every time—Egypt or God. What is found in Egypt are details. God provides pleasant things for us; all of us have at least one good thing coming to us. Some of us need some adversity needed in order to appreciate our vacations. Faith rest guarantees that we will be occupied by the giver and not by the gift.

Some people come to church in order to work God; they want to be bailed out, they want God to give them something, and they are willing to show up and face Bible class, even though they hate it. Or they show up to church in order to get out of a jam.

Bible doctrine is designed to get our eyes on the giver; not on the gift. God's perfect righteousness does not hinder His love for us, because of the cross. God does the planning in giving. Since He does that, it is important for us to understand, so it is important for us to focus on the Person.

The Jews are out of line; but Moses is about to get out of line as well. For 39 years, Moses has endured the unendurable, using faith rest and Bible doctrine; Moses loved God and God provided everything for him, including the 2nd wife, the Ethiopian woman. There was never a need that God did not provide for Moses; and Moses had his eyes on the giver. Moses is also going to switch and, at the end of a crisis, a mental attitude sin will pop in and keep him out of the land.

Num 20:6–8: [Then Moses and Aaron went from the presence of the assembly to the entrance of the tent of meeting and fell on their faces. And the glory of the LORD appeared to them, and the LORD spoke to Moses, saying, "Take the staff, and assemble the congregation, you and Aaron your brother, and tell the rock before their eyes to yield its water. So you shall bring water out of the rock for them and give drink to the congregation and their cattle."](#)

Moses enjoyed striking the rock previously; he wanted to hit something. Jesus Christ was struck on the cross so that we might have the water of life freely. However, the doctrinal analogy is, the 2nd time, Christ is already struck for us; so, in phase II, we speak to Him. Jesus dies just once for us. Moses omitted from his thinking a principle doctrine; to get water this time, God told Moses to speak to the rock.

Moses was to take the staff, assemble the congregation and bring along Aaron, and then he was to speak to the rock, and the word for rock is different; it is an elevated rock, to represent the risen Christ.

Moses is tied up in knots. He is pissed off at these Jews. The Jews remembered Egypt and Moses remembered the 1st Meribah. Moses did not think back to Egypt, but he thought back to the 1st Meribah, and that time, he whacked the rock, and that he found to be satisfying.

Had Moses gone positive, he would have crossed the Jordan, but he went negative against the Word of God, because he was pissed off; it went against his emotional state.

Num 20:9–11: [And Moses took the staff from before the LORD, as he commanded him. Then Moses and Aaron gathered the assembly together before the rock, and he said to them, "Hear now, you rebels: shall we bring water for you out of this rock?" And Moses lifted up his hand and struck the rock with his staff twice, and water came out abundantly, and the congregation drank, and their livestock.](#)

There was nothing about a speech either. That was also thrown in by Moses for free. "Must we fetch water for you out of this rock?" But Moses is not getting the water out of the rock; God is going to do that. Moses disobeys the instructions. Moses failed, but God did not.

Moses struck the rock twice, and that is a matter of mental attitude sins; Moses knew his instructions exactly, but instead of speaking to the rock, he spoke to the people. He got his eyes on these people. When you love God, there is a time when you must ignore people.

Moses' failure did not wipe out the faithfulness of God. A British preacher who has a deep meaningful voice, and he says, "I want you to remember this brethren" and Bob still remembers it, so maybe it works, "It all depends on you." That is like Moses hitting the rock twice. God brought the water out from the rock, because God is faithful. The people do not know the difference; they don't know that Moses screwed up. Moses did.

Water came out abundantly; not a trickle. God keeps His word. Bob hopes they got sick. These Jews were the recipients of God's grace and it never occurred to them. God blessed these knuckleheads abundantly and they did not even know it was grace. That is the problem. Scar tissue on the soul keeps you from appreciating what God has done for us. If God will bless and provide for that entire lame congregation and their animals, then we know that God will do the same for us. We will faith rest and no-water situation.

Num 20:12–13: [And the LORD said to Moses and Aaron, "Because you did not believe in me, to uphold me as holy in the eyes of the people of Israel, therefore you shall not bring this assembly into the land that I have given them." These are the waters of Meribah, where the people of Israel quarreled with the LORD, and through them he showed himself holy.](#)

Love toward God can be converted into pseudo love in a few moments by scar tissue. In a moment of time, when Moses went off of the faith rest technique, mental attitude sins and negative volition toward God's Word through the darkness of the soul. When he executes God's plan incorrectly, giving some short sermon and striking the rock twice.

We had a tough day today so that we could have a love of God greater than any meribah situation. We have the opportunity to respond to God's love and to respond to His love.

"You did not set Me apart" is what God tells Moses. Who gets the credit in grace? God gets the credit in grace. This is the water of Meribah, the 2nd time that they have been there.

Psalms 95:6–9: Oh come, let us worship and bow down; let us kneel before the LORD, our Maker! For he is our God, and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand. Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your hearts, as at Meribah, as on the day at Massah in the wilderness, when your fathers put me to the test and put me to the proof, though they had seen my work.

There was failure based upon the darkness in their souls. Misery, panic palace, etc.

Heb. 3:7–11: Therefore, as the Holy Spirit says, "Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion, on the day of testing in the wilderness, where your fathers put me to the test and saw my works for forty years. Therefore I was provoked with that generation, and said, 'They always go astray in their heart; they have not known my ways.' As I swore in my wrath, 'They shall not enter my rest.'"

Heb 3:12–19: Take care, brothers, lest there be in any of you an evil, unbelieving heart, leading you to fall away from the living God. But exhort one another every day, as long as it is called "today," that none of you may be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin. For we share in Christ, if indeed we hold our original confidence firm to the end. As it is said, "Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your hearts as in the rebellion." For who were those who heard and yet rebelled? Was it not all those who left Egypt led by Moses? And with whom was he provoked for forty years? Was it not with those who sinned, whose bodies fell in the wilderness? And to whom did he swear that they would not enter his rest, but to those who were disobedient? So we see that they were unable to enter because of unbelief.

Heb 4:1–3: Therefore, while the promise of entering his rest still stands, let us fear lest any of you should seem to have failed to reach it. For good news came to us just as to them, but the message they heard did not benefit them, because they were not united by faith with those who listened. For we who have believed enter that rest, as he has said, "As I swore in my wrath, 'They shall not enter my rest,'" although his works were finished from the foundation of the world.

They did not mix the Word with faith when they heard it. When you accept the Word of God, doctrine comes in and faith converts it so that it is useable.

The Principle of Faith Rest

1. The mechanics of faith rest are found in Heb. 4:1–3, mixing the promises of God with faith.

2. Faith rest was the basic system of spirituality among the Old Testament saints. Rom. 11:4 Habak. 2:4
3. The ministry of the Holy Spirit in spirituality does not occur until the Church Age. John 7:39 16:14 1Cor. 6:17–19 Eph. 5:18 Rom. 8:2–4
4. Faith rest technique produces a relaxed mental attitude. Isa. 26:3–4
5. Faith rest is the basis for effective prayer. Matt. 21:22
6. Heb. 11:6 1John 4:4–5 basis for spiritual victory
7. It continues to be a factor in every dispensation. 2Cor. 5:7

Psa 95:10 For forty years I loathed that generation and said, "They are a people who go astray in their heart, and they have not known my ways."

Psa 95:11 Therefore I swore in my wrath, "They shall not enter my rest."

Prov. 24:12

faith rest and preparation

circa 6/11/69

Bob tells Reese to get the doors.

Next increment of faith rest.

Prov. 24:1–6: **Be not envious of evil men, nor desire to be with them, for their hearts devise violence, and their lips talk of trouble. By wisdom a house is built, and by understanding it is established; by knowledge the rooms are filled with all precious and pleasant riches. A wise man is full of strength, and a man of knowledge enhances his might, for by wise guidance you can wage your war, and in abundance of counselors there is victory.**

Badly translated. If you study the economy, all the little sweet people and all the little nice people did not make the economy. It was tough people that made the economy. There is a true spiritual toughness which comes from the faith rest technique.

Most people expect the preacher to be a mealy-mouthed doormat; they expect him to be a funerals, at the bedside of those who have died. The purpose of the minister is to communicate doctrine and it is nice to have doctrine in the skull. The pastor tells you how to do your business by the teaching of Bible doctrine.

Someone running the country depending on doctrine can't do wrong; if he depends upon a multitude of counselors, he can't do right. This passage helps us prepare for a crisis.

You will not be sweet or anything else if you are jealous. When you are cranking out jealousy from your soul, you are not happy. You cannot be jealous and happy at the same time, by human standards or divine standards.

Prov. 24:1: **Be not jealous...**

Doctrine gets into the soul and it invades every part of the soul, and divine good comes from the soul. The inhale of Bible doctrine; inhale of Bible doctrine, exhale of the right attitude toward every aspect of life. There are times when you need to be prepared for the crisis. It requires some breathing under difficult circumstances.

Wind sprints are done near the end of a football practice after being half dead. If you are going to move with agility and move with success, you are going to need to do spiritual wind sprints, so that when the crisis comes, you will be ready for it. You cannot meet a crisis without practice for it. Every day you get some opportunity to function under the faith rest technique. The enemy of your soul which lives in your soul; jealousy, which represents itself as a terrible mental attitude sin, but it also represents the principle of mental attitude sins.

No doctrine means no faith rest technique. Indifference to doctrine, no interest in doctrine; scar tissue on the left bank of the soul. Once it builds up on the left bank, it is very easy to get it on the right bank. Darkness expresses itself by going out the old sin nature. Human good from the area of strength and lust patterns which do not evacuate.

Darkness has a conversation with approbation lust and power lust; and approbation lust picks up a lot of darkness, and a mental attitude sin. The sin nature evacuates everything in the soul which is wrong and evil and vicious. The mental attitude sin pushes from jealousy some weird behavior patterns. Operation I'll show you; operation revenge tactics, maligning, judging. The sin nature is blocked up from previous sins. Where there is darkness in the soul because there is no soul-breathing. The evacuation of certain kinds of sins are forced. Maligning, judging, ostracism, revenge tactics. Obviously, this is an unhealthy soul.

The very first exhale in our life as a Christian, is the exhale of faith toward God. Faith rest always exhales toward God. Because there is scar tissue, there is darkness, which means there is no exhale of faith.

Then a crisis occurs and there is the collapse of the soul. If the crisis is great enough, there will be a psychotic or neurotic individual. Obviously, if you face a crisis and you are under pressure and there has been no faith rest, you cannot accomplish much when you are charged by the elephant. You can go into hysteria; you can blame all kinds of other people. The Christian life is not designed to do this sort of thing. We are not designed to be strong enough to make it on our own. Making it on our own is not living the Christian life anyway. We are not designed to be strong enough to endure maximum pressure. We might get into limbo or get so stupid we don't know our own name, but that is not living the Christian life.

Be not jealous is the intensive Piel stem. Once you have jealousy on the inside and you begin to evacuate those sins, then you desire to be with these kinds of people, those who are very nice to each other but they cannot stand each other. ...of evil men.... Evil men are people whose old sin natures control their soul. They have mental attitude sins and the evacuate other kinds of sins. There are those who lean entirely upon the details of life;

they try to get as much money as possible; they try to show you how they have money and you don't; and they have certain pleasures and a certain social life; and everything is designed to show you what they have. It is an amazing thing that God's plan says you will never walk in darkness. The details of life are on the outside, and such a person has to depend upon these things from the outside. He sees this and he sees that and he goes after it, but his soul is in darkness. He sees a woman, or a pot of gold, or a house, or something along these lines.

So we are not to be jealous of evil men; jealousy is a mental attitude sin, which is a sign of negative volition toward Bible doctrine, which clogs up the banks of the soul; or it means failure to rebound. If you have no scar tissue. Rebound will prevent scar tissue but it will not remove scar tissue. If you have no scar tissue and you commit a mental attitude sins and you rebound, you still have no scar tissue. What will make you healthy is the daily intake of Bible doctrine. Not once and awhile.

...neither desire to be with them... Bob remembers his crowd as a relaxed bunch of wonderful people and they weren't phoney and they weren't hypocritical; all unbelievers but very nice and wonderful people.

We don't all have the same kind of a crowd, but we all have a crowd toward which we would gravitate. When you are a slave of the details of life, then you are miserable; when you are the master of these details, then you have inner happiness. If you take in doctrine, it has daily dividends; but you are also doing wind sprints every day preparing you for the crisis. You might lean on someone, but cursed is the man who trusts in man. This can be simply illustrated.

Bob and Frank run a couple miles on the track together. Bob was prepared by running on the track regularly, so he could run and talk to Frank; but Frank was huffing and puffing and could not talk that easily. By taking in doctrine regularly, you can breath normally because you have been using faith rest every day and you should thank God every day for the obnoxious characters that you run into every day.

You may inhale doctrine daily and you may have to rebound every day, but someday along the line you will need to cut back on mental attitude sins to make it. Fear, worry, pride, etc.

Prov. 24:2: ...for their heart studies [mediates on, devises] destruction [or, revenge tactics]... You cannot have love and competition all in the same breath.

Amal = *that which produces misery*. ...their lips are designed for creating misery [or, their lips create misery for you].... Many churches spend all of their time dealing with wild women and booze sermons and they have never heard of sins of the tongue. However, mental attitude sins are the worst, which produce the sins of the tongue. Phalas = *excrement, mental attitude sins*. Some tragedy or crisis comes along and they are floored because they have not been daily inhaling doctrine. This is the story of the Jews 40 years in the desert. There are many things not mentioned. There were married and single

people who were miserable; their parties were miserable. And they were all jealous of Moses at some time or another. The expressed it in so many different ways. This passage is to show us as we, as a born again believer, can be prepared for any crisis in life. We prepare daily for this.

A yurgementando. These Mohammedons, Moros, and this group were quite immoral and they still wanted to go to heaven, and they would go to a ceremony, and they would dash out of a temple with a knife and they would kill the first Christian that they saw, which was any white man. We got a .45 back because the .38 was not stopping them.

Wisdom is not something you can see; wisdom is doctrine entering into the soul. The exhale of doctrine is wisdom; when it goes in, it is knowledge and understanding. Doctrine exhales faith rest, love category #1. When you exhale doctrine toward God, your life takes on a whole new meaning. Those who are trying to cause you trouble, you exhale to them a relaxed mental attitude. Wisdom also stays away from the clucks. Wisdom says that life is too short. The sin nature is crying for a little attention, but rebound knocks it right back down. The charge of the mosquito and you faith rest it toward God. The inhale is understand and the exhale is doctrine going out. Your life and soul is built on wisdom, which is the exhale.

Prov. 24:3: **By wisdom a house is built, and by understanding it is established** [or, *one prepares himself*];...

Prov. 24:4: **...by knowledge the rooms are filled with all precious and pleasant riches....**

Precious refers to something of value; pleasant is something which is stimulating, which means happiness. The benefits are mentioned in vv. 5–6:

Prov. 24:5: **A wise man is full of strength, and a man of knowledge enhances his might,...** Constantly and habitually; a believer priest inhaling and exhaling faith rest and the capacity for love; this person is strong and he is prepared. He always has the strength there, and it is not apparent until the crisis. Bob thinks of Fred Macinitosh, and he road through a crisis perfectly, taking in doctrine every day. He was designed for the crisis, and kept a injured plane ready to fall out of the sky, and he kept it level while his men got out. Dick Bong, who was as loose and relaxed as anything, and he shot down 41 planes. He liked gum.

The measuring rod for us in the crisis is the inhale and exhale of doctrine. We prepare ourselves everyday. This is the strength of soul. Obviously there must be an inhale first before there can be an exhale. Understanding, followed by the exhale of wisdom. A man of knowledge means that he keeps on taking it in. The fact that he is strong doesn't mean that he stops with that; he keeps on inhaling.

Prov. 24:6: **...for by wise guidance you can wage your war, and victory is in the greatness of the one counseling** [not, *in abundance of counselors there is victory*].

The military profession is always an honorable profession in the Bible. It involves killing and it is honorable and the Word of God always treats it as an honorable profession.

A general who makes the most momentous of decisions, where one bad decision can mean the death of tons of men. As a soldier, he does his job as unto God. Every great captian in history had moral courage; Julius Cæsar had fantastic moral courage and could make great decisions under pressure. Frederick, Napoleon and Alexander all were able to make great decisions. Some were able to take smaller forces and attack and do well against their enemies. The oblique order of battle that Frederick used took iron nerve. If you start exhaling wisdom, faith rest and love toward God, you will do a good job. You can produce divine good by what you do in school and what you do in the barracks. As long as we are breathing, we are producing as the Lord wants us to.

Constant intake of doctrine provides and output of love toward God and good decisions in his life, in this case, a general waging war. Bob gives examples as to how commands would be given. Also a confederate mistake where an officer did not move out quickly enough.

Zech. 12:1–4: [The burden of the word of the LORD concerning Israel: Thus declares the LORD, who stretched out the heavens and founded the earth and formed the spirit of man within him: "Behold, I am about to make Jerusalem a cup of staggering to all the surrounding peoples. The siege of Jerusalem will also be against Judah. On that day I will make Jerusalem a heavy stone for all the peoples. All who lift it will surely hurt themselves. And all the nations of the earth will gather against it. On that day, declares the LORD, I will strike every horse with panic, and its rider with madness. But for the sake of the house of Judah I will keep my eyes open, when I strike every horse of the peoples with blindness.](#)

The goblet is Jerusalem, and the armies of the kings of the north are hoping to drink it up; and you take one sip of Jerusalem and you stagger. Jerusalem will also be a burdosome stone; the rock comes this way. This is a crisis. A horse is the dumbest of all animals. All these things like Flica and that is a malicious lie. If you want to see the quintessence of stupidity, it is a frightened horse. In parades, Bob would shake a saber at a skiddish horse and it would just take off. Apparently some people peeled from Berachah when Bob said that dogs were not going to heaven.

God will use two men: the governors of Judah, aluph, which refers to generals. These are the two generals of Prov. 24:5–6.

Zech. 12:5–7: [Then the clans of Judah shall say to themselves, 'The inhabitants of Jerusalem have strength through the LORD of hosts, their God.' "On that day I will make the clans of Judah like a blazing pot in the midst of wood, like a flaming torch among sheaves. And they shall devour to the right and to the left all the surrounding peoples, while Jerusalem shall again be inhabited in its place, in Jerusalem. "And the LORD will give salvation to the tents of Judah first, that the glory of the house of David and the glory of the inhabitants of Jerusalem may not surpass that of Judah.](#)

Some story about “nuts” but a French word, which Bob puts on the board. Sometimes general officers make an estimation of the situation and they give up. This officer was in a grave situation. He had cooks with M1's. He did not think about surrender. Here we are dealing with two military officers who have their faith in God.

The inhabitants of Jerusalem would be organized to fight. From another passage, it explains this. Another crowd went out and surrendered and they were wiped out. About a third of the city is left and who is in there are born again believers. They made a correct estimation of the situation. These two officers had doctrine and courage. This tells us that they inhales doctrine daily and they were occupied with Christ and in the crisis they went right on in the crisis, and went into the Millennium very much alive.

We will have a crisis in our lives; everyone has a few. The charge of the elephant; the charge of the mosquito.

Lesson #17 Faith rest in a National Crisis Basic Doc. Isa. 36:12 circa 6/18/69

Sennacherib had a system very similar to what we have today. There was a similar use of ideas to conquer a people.

Joe Stalin's plan to destroy the US in 1932:

1. The use of philosophy, mysticism, the further of atheism all to discredit the teaching of the Word of God. He recognized the purpose of destroying the teaching of God's Word.
2. The destruction of marriage and the advancement of interracial marriage.
3. Principles of culture: cultivate the ugly, the abberant in literature, art and music. Any people who utilize Aboriginal type music (the drums) and the beat, you find a decadent people who are easy to conquer and to destroy. Good music like before WWII is practically gone. If their music gives them rapport with freedom, then they can resist in the music. Deep in the Heart of Texas. Same thing is true in art. Bob liked to see pictures of heroes and various battles and beautiful paintings which described how you gain your freedom. Today, you see a blank canvas with a purple dot up in one corner. Stalin said, that's good for the Communists. When Remington's paintings and Charlie Russel's paintings are put in the discard pile. Today, people dance like the natives in the bush of Africa. You have to be about half nuts. Two pieces of spaghetti and a beat.
4. Create unrest, suspicion and revolt among working classes; promote class warfare. It is being promoted on the college campus. Promotion of class warfare. Those who go to college will benefit the least from class warfare. These people are stupid; they are cutting their own throats. Class warfare has been a part of Communism for a long time.
5. Economy: standardize the cheap and the shoddy; advocate state monopoly of ownership. Let the government take over industries. This is cause inefficiency. No nation can survive 200 years of inefficient leadership. You have to get off of a monetary standard. Exchange gold for foreign currency whenever possible.

6. Think in terms of brotherhood; think in terms of internationalism. When you destroy the patriotism of a people, you destroy any reason for them to defend their freedom. West Point, ROTC, etc. must be gotten rid of. Set up the idea of thinking internationally. Undermine patriotism and all preparation for defense and persuade the young people toward pacifism. We are there; we have arrived. Most of us are aware of this fact and the Communist plot and of the 3 main objectives of the Communists is the US (also, Asia, Africa and the Middle East). Right now, teenagers are going to school 8 and 10 hours a day to learn how to take over this country.

Young, vigorous tough men are plotting our destruction behind the iron curtain, and they are looking to destroy us. They are motivated to destroy; they are motivated by a neo-patriotism, to an ideal. They do not consider themselves a super-race, but they say they are super-thinkers and that they can defeat us in every way. Communists have the greatest artillery and the best trained infantry and the best armored forces, and the best air force and more trained pilots (thanks to MacNamara) than any other nation in the world. Russian pilots operate in Cuba, they are ready to fight against Israelis, etc. They have the best trained pilots ever. Between Kennedy and MacNamara, they have destroyed our forces.

Rickover is one of the greatest minds of the Navy. Russians have missile cruisers from which they can launch nuclear warheads. By comparison, we do not stack up. The Russians say, they don't need the military for the US, that they can defeat us with ideas. The average American today doesn't know where he is going or where he has been. He knows he is a pacifist, he'll get a little refer now and again, into a gypsy caravan, but he won't play football and he won't run a quarter mile in 55 seconds. This is the average college student at the University of California at Berkeley or at Harvard. We are conquered by ideas. A new generation has hit the scene and all you have to do is watch tv. Who gets 5 minutes? Someone who is putting a pig up for president. This is what we face in this country. We need believers today who is sit on the wall and faith rest it all the way; we need a rise of Bible doctrine; because Bible doctrine in the soul of this new generation is the only thing which will stop this fantastic Communist plot.

Rykoff said it is our duty to get into the minds of all nations pacifism, internationalism, friendship, while we continue military buildup. Lenin: we set up a mental barage against the youth. Another: Friendship with liberal theologians must be sought. Another: war to the hilt between capitalism or Communism is inevitable. The bourgeois will have to be put to sleep. We will try to develop friendships and agreements and as soon as their guard is down, we will smash them with our closed fist.

Harry Hopkins and FDR made is possible for the Communists to take over half the world. Liberal ministers and college professors have the same ideas; people in the entertainment industry; they believe in the same principles which function behind the iron curtain. And you have been brainwashed by goofy ideas and news commentators. A lot of you must be confused because of how you voted in the best 20 years. Some of you probably voted

for Kennedy. What do you do for brains? When did you last think in terms of freedom and authority and the military?

The Assyrians went out and conquered wherever they went and they began to go out to the west, and they started a system of capitalism and they had iron industries and iron mines and iron equipments, and soon Assyrian caravans travels throughout the world. Good strong military; free enterprise, capitalism. Finally, they moved into southern Palestine, the land of Judah, which was a crisis for the weak king Hezekiah. While the people were becoming spiritually strong, their leadership was becoming quite weak.

Hezekiah began to look for help. Merodoc Baladian (?) the Chaldean, but he was too far away. There was Egypt and Isaiah began to teach. Hezekiah could have faith rested a catastrophe, he depended upon Egypt instead of God.

Isa 31:3 The Egyptians are man, and not God, and their horses are flesh, and not spirit. When the LORD stretches out his hand, the helper will stumble, and he who is helped will fall, and they will all perish together.

Isa 30:1–3: "Ah, stubborn children," declares the LORD, "who carry out a plan, but not mine, and who make an alliance, but not of my Spirit, that they may add sin to sin; who set out to go down to Egypt, without asking for my direction, to take refuge in the protection of Pharaoh and to seek shelter in the shadow of Egypt! Therefore shall the protection of Pharaoh turn to your shame, and the shelter in the shadow of Egypt to your humiliation.

Because they did not trust in God, this crisis became real. The invasion crisis.

Isa 36:1–2: In the fourteenth year of King Hezekiah, Sennacherib king of Assyria came up against all the fortified cities of Judah and took them. And the king of Assyria sent the Rabshakeh from Lachish to King Hezekiah at Jerusalem, with a great army. And he stood by the conduit of the upper pool on the highway to the Washer's Field.

Archeology has reconstructed Lachish, which is a fantastic city of great fortifications.

Rabshakkah is not a person, but he is the head of the state for the Assyrians. The tartan is the highest ranking military officer. Rabasarus is the chief personal delegate who represents Sennacherib. The idea to show up with the army is to get the people frightened. They put pressure on the Jews to cause them to be frightened.

The wall has to bend in Jerusalem, and there is this pool and the people will sit on the wall, and this will be the perfect amphitheater for these 3 members of the state department from Israel who are 3 frightened men.

Isa 36:3–6: And there came out to him Eliakim the son of Hilkiah, who was over the household, and Shebna the secretary, and Joah the son of Asaph, the recorder. And the Rabshakeh said to them, "Say to Hezekiah, 'Thus says the great king, the king of Assyria: On what do you rest this trust of yours? Do you think that mere words are strategy and power for war?

In whom do you now trust, that you have rebelled against me? Behold, you are trusting in Egypt, that broken reed of a staff, which will pierce the hand of any man who leans on it. Such is Pharaoh king of Egypt to all who trust in him.

The plan did not work with the Jews, although their state department was frightened. "Look, if you are going to put your trust in a king, don't make it the Egyptian king. There is an Ethiopian pharaoh down there right now. The Jews are better under a powerful king like Sennacherib."

"Do you think that you can defeat me with words?" He has an excellent G2 and Isaiah has been teaching doctrine, and people are going to these Bible classes, and they are trusting the Lord, and he wants to cut them off from this Isaiah stuff. Ignore and reject the promises of God.

Do you trust in Egypt? Here is what you are doing—you think that Egypt is a crutch, but it is a broken reed. Shebakhah would not think of fighting so he sends his heir apparent and next in line. Terhakka is that one. The Ethiopian infantry charged in, saw the Assyrian army, and turned tail and ran. It was not much of a battle. He wiped out Egypt in a hurry. So Sennacherib sends a force to kill two birds with one stone. The battle of Altika is the broken reed that Egypt is.

Hezekiah can only think in terms of images, so when Isaiah or Hezekiah tore down the idols, Hezekiah tells them that there is no one left to protect them now. Assyrians liked to skin captives without breaking the skin. Try to get all the skin off without a break in the skin and to keep the person alive. They were lovely people.

Two archeologists uncovered the Assyrian prisms, a detailed description of how they fought their battles. Everything else is a lot more cruel; the Jews know this, so they are aware of the danger. There is a difference between faith rest and stupidity. They are aware of the danger. They know that their leaders have failed, but they are sitting on this wall with Bible doctrine in their souls and the doctrine in their souls will turn the tide.

There are 185,000 of the best infantry in that time with the best horses and armor known. Behind the walls, they had squat.

Isa 36:7–8: But if you say to me, "We trust in the LORD our God," is it not he whose high places and altars Hezekiah has removed, saying to Judah and to Jerusalem, "You shall worship before this altar"? Come now, make a wager with my master the king of Assyria: I will give you two thousand horses, if you are able on your part to set riders on them.

"We will give you 2000 horses if you can put riders on them. In Jerusalem, there are not even 2000 men who can come out and ride these horses.

Isa 36:9–10: How then can you repulse a single captain among the least of my master's servants, when you trust in Egypt for chariots and for horsemen? Moreover, is it without the LORD

that I have come up against this land to destroy it? The LORD said to me, Go up against this land and destroy it."

Then he says, "The Lord is on my side." This is like a congregational meeting where someone says, vote for my self of the issue because it is God's will. Berachah was at 502 Lamar, across from the library. All the people who said that are scattered now throughout the city and they are not in Bible class. Some told Bob that God would not bless his ministry from leaving Lamar. God does not bless Thieme's ministry based upon who and what he is.

People are intimidated by someone saying, "It is God's will." The rabshaka was a smooth operator using this ruse.

Isa 36:11–13: Then Eliakim, Shebna, and Joah said to the Rabshakeh, "Please speak to your servants in Aramaic, for we understand it. Do not speak to us in the language of Judah within the hearing of the people who are on the wall." But the Rabshakeh said, "Has my master sent me to speak these words to your master and to you, and not to the men sitting on the wall, who are doomed with you to eat their own dung and drink their own urine?" Then the Rabshakeh stood and called out in a loud voice in the language of Judah: "Hear the words of the great king, the king of Assyria!

Syrian or Aramaic was a trade language, and they did not want those on the wall to hear what was being said. They are frightened. Don't speak to us in the Jew's language. This is why the Rabshakeh is able to attempt to mess with the Jews on the wall, and those who meet him are quite concerned.

The Rabshakeh said, "I did not come to speak to you but to the people." Literal from the Hebrew; Bob checked it out and it is all there. "Eat your own dung and drink your own piss." This is an idiom for total conquest.

Isa 36:14–20: Thus says the king: 'Do not let Hezekiah deceive you, for he will not be able to deliver you. Do not let Hezekiah make you trust in the LORD by saying, "The LORD will surely deliver us. This city will not be given into the hand of the king of Assyria." Do not listen to Hezekiah. For thus says the king of Assyria: Make your peace with me and come out to me. Then each one of you will eat of his own vine, and each one of his own fig tree, and each one of you will drink the water of his own cistern, until I come and take you away to a land like your own land, a land of grain and wine, a land of bread and vineyards. Beware lest Hezekiah mislead you by saying, "The LORD will deliver us." Has any of the gods of the nations delivered his land out of the hand of the king of Assyria? Where are the gods of Hamath and Arpad? Where are the gods of Sepharvaim? Have they delivered Samaria out of my hand? Who among all the gods of these lands have delivered their lands out of my hand, that the LORD should deliver Jerusalem out of my hand?"

it is true that Hezekiah cannot deliver these people, but the implication is, no one else can deliver you either. Grace will always find a way. Bible doctrine says, the Lord will deliver.

The more hopeless the situation, the greater the opportunity for God to display His grace. So, the Rabshakeh gives a true statement with a false implication.

God will deliver them on the basis of grace. There are not 2000 men in the city who could fight. Obviously the Assyrian Rabshekah has more brains than they entire state department of Judah. Hezekiah is sincere and stupid. He is a weak sister. He is a carnal king, a sorry believer, and jackass, and a rejecter of doctrine. This man did not have Bible doctrine, he did not take it from Isaiah; he did not go to Bible class. "Relax, you're here tonight."

Go down to Egypt and make a deal. You've gone out and made deals with the Egyptians. "Woe to them who went down to Egypt." What are you depending upon now? If you are not using faith rest, then you are down in Egypt somewhere. If you are not daily exhaling faith rest in God.

V. 16 is typical of people today. He promised a welfare state. Probably many of you are depending upon social security. What happens when you beat down free enterprise? Our country is living off the genius of a few people. Private enterprise and our government seeks to shut it down at any time. Everywhere you turn, private enterprise is being shot down. There is not enough money in social security to cover our bills.

The Rabshakeh sought to undermine Hezekiah's leadership. "Surrender to me and give up." "Drink from your own cistern" which is the welfare state, an appeal to materialism lust. This always appeals to those who are weak or indifferent or disoriented to life. He is going to take them to a land which is like the backside of hell. They would go to the northern part of Iraq and it is a dump. There is nothing there to sustain them. They know the migration policy. "We'll take you away to a nice place" he lies.

Then he names off some city-states which did not deliver them, other countries. Their gods did not do anything for them, so you cannot trust your gods either. False parallelism.

Isa 36:21–22: [But they were silent and answered him not a word, for the king's command was, "Do not answer him." Then Eliakim the son of Hilkiah, who was over the household, and Shebna the secretary, and Joah the son of Asaph, the recorder, came to Hezekiah with their clothes torn, and told him the words of the Rabshakeh.](#)

The state department was having a breakdown, and the people were okay with it. They had a relaxed mental attitude.

Psalm 46 to see their thinking.

Psalm 46:1–3: [To the choirmaster. Of the Sons of Korah. According to Alamoth. A Song. God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble. Therefore we will not fear though the earth gives way, though the mountains be moved into the heart of the sea, though its waters roar and foam, though the mountains tremble at its swelling. Selah.](#)

Psalm 46:4–6: There is a river whose streams make glad the city of God, the holy habitation of the Most High. God is in the midst of her; she shall not be moved; God will help her when morning dawns. The nations rage, the kingdoms totter; he utters his voice, the earth melts. The LORD of hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our fortress. Selah. Come, behold the works of the LORD, how he has brought desolations on the earth.

This is the way these people were thinking.

Isa. 37:36: And the angel of the LORD went out and struck down a hundred and eighty-five thousand in the camp of the Assyrians. And when people arose early in the morning, behold, these were all dead bodies.

This is what God would do.

Psalm 46:9–11: He makes wars cease to the end of the earth; he breaks the bow and shatters the spear; he burns the chariots with fire. "Be still, and know that I am God. I will be exalted among the nations, I will be exalted in the earth!" The LORD of hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our fortress. Selah.

Category #1 faith rest: "I will be exalted among the Assyrians. I will be exalted. Selah means to stop singing and listen to the music. The next mornings, believers who faith rested it could get up and then next morning and enjoy the music. It is Psalm 46 which will turn back the Communists. Faith rest will turn back the enemy in our day.

Lesson #18 Mental Attitude Dynamics/Basic Doctrine/2Cor. 10:1 circa 6/25/69

This is an hour and 36 minute lesson.

You think: volition, you think about what you are going to do; emotion, you think about how you will respond; every part of the soul is related to thinking. The principle of being made or broken by a thought. *As a man thinks in his soul, so he is.* Under the concept and the guise that the opposition should have equal time (the opposition should be beaten into the ground).

The human viewpoint of life or the psychological systems for adjustment.

If you are going to bring every thought into captivity for Christ, you might as well know what the other side is doing. This is a list of things that you ought not be doing;

1. Rationalization is self-justification which is based upon scar tissue in the soul. Self-justification comes from self-righteousness. Some people cannot stand it unless they are right in every situation. Self-justification through the mentality of the soul; wrong actions are justified based upon prior actions which are wrong or distorted; or based on false concepts of norms and standards. This is how some believers live much of the time. When did you justify such a stupid thing that you've done? Life is too short to constantly run around to justify yourself to yourself and to others. Is this really necessary? Wouldn't you like to be free from running around and

explaining what you do all the time. This is not a part of the Christian life. Christianity has taken this over. If you step out of Kelly's Bar and 5 members of the congregation walk by, you might want to tell them that you are witnessing. Every time you turn around, you find yourself hemmed in with the idea that you need to explain everything to everyone. It is really tragic to live this way.

- a. Two wrongs do not make a right. If someone has wronged you, the worse thing you can do is wrong them. Otherwise you will spend the rest of your life in self-justification.
- b. There is no happiness in retaliation. Some guy came into Bob's office and they exchanged a few words, and he said, "I think I might just let you throw me out." Buddy Dano just softly talked and walked him out.
- c. Implacability results in habitual and instinctive retaliation. You are wronged, you want to retaliate, and then you want to justify yourself. Those who are implacable, they carry one thought in their mind, and you want to instinctively retaliate, which destroys your ability to appreciate life. Human viewpoint adjustment is not worth it; life is too short. Until this time, it is a good idea to have a cage somewhere and a keeper where you can go.
- d. You cannot build your happiness on someone else's unhappiness.

The objective is to get grace into your soul, which is done by taking in doctrine. One form of legalism is to treat people on the basis of how they treat you. If you are legalistic, you will retaliate when you are hurt. It will come out through the sin nature; you will show them. Suppose someone that you have someone who you have some sort of affection for and suppose you do hurt that person in retaliation, you are not happier. There is no grace in your soul when you instinctively want to hurt or retaliate.

Bob gives a boxing lesson and what you do instinctively when someone throws a punch. That is what people do with a thought. If you have implacability instinctively, you reach out and hurt them. If someone is nice to you, you show them your nice side; and if they are not, you instinctively retaliate. Implacability goes into action immediately.

2. Direct attack, which is an anger adjustment to life. If you cannot get your way, throw a tantrum. Direct attack is a human viewpoint function in life.
 - a. Objectives of direct attack: To get attention.
 - b. To control the people or environment around you.
 - c. To be spiteful and vengeful, an expression of implacability.
3. Defense mechanism; you protect the soul from things you cannot deal with. It is designed to take the pressure off of you. You change your thought pattern or you change your behavior pattern. You change your thought pattern or you change your behavior pattern; or both. You think everyone in church is down on you, so you say, "I am down on that church;" or "To hell with them." And then you decide you are going to go out and find some nice friends. A believer becomes disillusioned with his local church or with some other believers there.

4. Denial in its technical psychological sense. A difficulty or a dangers is ignored . It is adjusting to a circumstance, but ignoring reality. Failure to recognize danger and to act as if it is not like snake handlers. Denial is not for Berachah, since most are too practical for that.
5. Sublimation: human viewpoint adjustment finding a new outlet for a drive or a frustration. A believer becomes bored and seeks happiness and decides "I'm going for the details." He simply sublimates by going for one or more of these things which he desires to do. It is substituting one thing for another. You can have the details of life and have happiness.

These are 5 ways for human viewpoint adjustment.

The Doctrine of the Mental Attitude

1. As a part of the spiritual conflict, there exists in the mentality of the soul (it includes angels; it has two groups of thoughts: human viewpoint and divine viewpoint. In the mentality of the soul, there is a certain amount of human viewpoint and divine viewpoint. Isa. 55: 6–11: "Seek the LORD while he may be found; call upon him while he is near; let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts; let him return to the LORD, that he may have compassion on him, and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon. The wicked man is the unbeliever. God does not only pardon, but He gives great grace. Not only does He forgive you, but He gives great blessing. For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, declares the LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts. "For as the rain and the snow come down from heaven and do not return there but water the earth, making it bring forth and sprout, giving seed to the sower and bread to the eater, so shall my word be that goes out from my mouth; it shall not return to me empty, but it shall accomplish that which I purpose, and shall succeed in the thing for which I sent it. For each of the human viewpoint adjustments, there is a parallel divine viewpoint answer to each one of them. There are divine viewpoint mechanics for adjustment.
2. God's plan for the believer priest calls for a new mental attitude. When you are saved, God's plan calls for a new mental attitude. 2Tim. 1:7–8: "...for God gave us a spirit not of fear but of power and love and self-control. Therefore do not be ashamed of the testimony about our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but share in suffering for the gospel by the power of God,..." A stabilized mentality. You have the capacity to love; to instinctively love God. You can instinctively love a member of the opposite sex or to love friends.
 - a. This new mental attitude means you are habitually angry, jealous, antagonistic, implacable. By rebound and the inhale of doctrine you have a relaxed mental attitude.
 - b. You instinctively operation on grace. You are not involved in demand love. Cat. #1 love: you demand love from God and you demand the way that He should love you. You cannot demand God's love; that is blasphemous. God

loves us on the basis of His character. You demand that from the opposite sex; and you expect certain things. Cat. #3 friends: who are your friends? Those you are the nicest to you, who give you the most attention; and those who can help me and do things for me. That is legalism in the soul. One though which is off-base and your soul gets out of kilter. How on earth can unbelievers achieve human happiness? They instinctively love on the basis of grace. Can you think about 5 things which irritate you? Of course you can! When you see those things, you retaliate, you irritate them, you get mad, you get upset; you get into the 5 systems of psychological adjustment. You will have to wake up to a fact that God's plan asks for you to operate on the basis of grace in the soul. Some of you have people and God mixed up with dogs. You expect certain things and you might reward them for it. Jesus Christ set the pattern for grace and He loved on the basis of His perfect character. Our ability to love is potential and based upon Bible doctrine. God in grace found a way to get grace into us. This is a part of the mental attitude picture. A thought can make or break you. What you think determines what you are. If you think grace, you are inhaling doctrine.

3. Mental attitude determines the character of a person. Mental attitude does not determine one's personality.
4. A new mental attitude is commanded for the Christian way of life. 2Cor. 10:4–6
5. Bible doctrine shapes this mental attitude. Doctrine is the mind of Christ.
6. The constant inhale of Bible doctrine produces confidence in the soul. 2Cor. 5:1, 6, 8
7. Love is a mental attitude. There are other kinds of love, but that is the one we are emphasizing. Deut. 6:5 10:12 11:13 Therefore, the capacity for love is resolved in the soul, not in the function of the body. You may be a sex athlete, but that does not make you a good lover. Some of you are too young and some are too old for that one. A good lover must have something in the soul; in the mind of the soul. Love is a mental attitude; love is what you think. There must be mental attitude love or there is no love.
8. Worldliness is a mental attitude. Worldliness is human viewpoint mental attitude. Worldliness is not something that you do. Almost everything you call worldliness is personal preference in dress, act or whatever. Just because you are extroverted, that does not make you worldly. You can be piously sitting in church and be the most worldly Christian around. You can have a very pious expression on your face. No one really knows who is worldly because no one can see you on the inside. God can. You cannot tell who is worldly and who isn't. "Surely as a pastor, I can point out the worldly section of my congregation; but I feel like Custer, which way to you point?" Rom. 12:2: **Do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewal of your mind, that by testing you may discern what is the will of God, what is good and acceptable and perfect.**
9. Stability is a mental attitude. You must be consistent in your mind. Isa. 3:4: **God will keep you in perfect peace because your mind is stayed on You.** 2Thess. 2:2 Philip. You must be consistent in the intake of the Word of God; you have a consistent mental attitude.

10. Giving money is a mental attitude. This shows you how you must correlate your mind with your pocketbook. What you think when you give is important. You can give a million dollars and 40,000 people know about it, and it means nothing to God. **Everyone man so he purposes in the mind, so let him give.** The widow with two mites is an expression of this. No one there is impressed. She goes out and she is minus this tenth of a cent. She has the same Lord, she has not lost her relaxed mental attitude. And Jesus says, "She is the greatest giver of all" because of her mental attitude; not because she gave all she had. She still has God. Her attitude toward God came from the inhale of doctrine and she made a decision to give all that she had. She still has cat. #1 love, and God will have to provide her with some more mites. Another comes in behind her and give a tenth of 1% of his income, but he still has most of his capital intact. His thinking is human viewpoint, even though many must have fawned over him.
- a. Tithing is not for the Church Age. It was a form of taxation. The percentage is not important.
 - b. It is not the amount. Sacrificial giving is not the important factor. How much you give is not the point. If God does not bless Berachah, then the doors should be closed.
 - c. Giving is no one else's business what you give. If you want a record of what you give, then you need to take a record yourself.
 - d. The most important thing in giving is a mental attitude of grace. Giving is a memorial to grace. You are recognizing the principle of grace. It is like God provided the chips for the game.
11. Mental attitude sins produce self-induced misery. Here is where a thought breaks you. If you are jealous, then it can be seen. It is important to remember this concept that mental attitude sins is like taking a bat and hitting yourself on the head until you knock yourself out. Thieme is now talking about firing a few rounds and how the gas escapes and it can blind you, if you keep it up. Some threw away their breech loaders. One guy said, I don't know which end to hold toward me. This is what we do with mental attitude sins. That pressure comes back and it hits us. We may fire a shell out and hit a target, and that gas comes out and hits us and we are hurt.
12. Evil is something that you think, not something that you do. Matt. 9:4 Gal. 6:3

Now the outline for this section; there are 3 paragraphs in this chapter:

Briefing on the spiritual conflict vv. 1–4
mental attitude in the spiritual conflict vv. 5–12
divine viewpoint dynamics vv. 13–18

Paul has been animated by the criticism, and he grabs the pen and starts writing.

Bob is writing something on the board which cracks up the congregation, but it is not shared with the taper's world.

2Cor. 10:1–4: I, Paul, myself come in along side to help you, by the meekness and gentleness of Christ--I who am humble when face to face with you, but bold toward you when I am away!-- I beg of you that when I am present I may not have to show boldness with such confidence as I count on showing against some who suspect us of walking according to the flesh. For though we walk in the flesh, we are not waging war according to the flesh. For the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh but have divine power to destroy strongholds.

The basis of their criticism is legalism. They have mental attitude sins and they are evacuating them through the sin nature as critics of Paul. They are constantly running him down; they malign him.

Criticism is a part of response alley. There is divine viewpoint and human viewpoint. Paul is being criticized by the Corinthians. Response alley is on each side. Divine viewpoint, he will have a relaxed mental attitude, even though he gets tough with them. He is writing while in fellowship. One of their complaints is, Paul is out of fellowship. I can tell you are out of fellowship by the tone of your voice.

Divine viewpoint toward success is mental attitude grace. Human viewpoint toward success is pride or arrogance. Suffering as a situation. In divine viewpoint there is faith rest; on the other side, there is fear, worry. People and obnoxious characters. Divine viewpoint is mental attitude love (agape) on the other side are mental attitude sins. Phase II commands: divine viewpoint responds production of divine good; human viewpoint produces human good. Details of life: divine viewpoint responds by being the master of the details of life; human viewpoint, you are the slave of the details of life.

The word translated *beseech* found twice is first παρακαλεω and in the next verse it will be δεομαι. Obviously two different words. *to come in along side to encourage, to come in along side to help.* Δεομαι = *to request.* The word *by* should be *through.*

2Cor. 10:1–4: I, Paul, myself come in along side to help you, by the meekness and gentleness of Christ--I who am humble when face to face with you, but bold toward you when I am away!-- I beg of you that when I am present I may not have to show boldness with such confidence as I count on showing against some who suspect us of walking according to the flesh. For though we walk in the flesh, we are not waging war according to the flesh. For the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh but have divine power to destroy strongholds.

We inhale doctrine, and it is converted to grace, so we exhale toward people with the capacity to love. The impact of this passage is what people see, from your soul. You must have grace in the soul in order to manifest it to others. You cannot fake it.

The remarks are made against Paul. They are claiming that he is humble in their presence, but big and fierce away from them. They were calling him *little soul, slavish, groveling, ingratiating.* When Paul is in Corinth, he is a mouse. When he picks up a pen

and writes 1 Corinthians, he is a roaring lion. Paul called the shorts under the power of the Spirit with perfect accuracy. All kinds, shapes and forms. When Paul was there the first time, they were responding. But after he left, they got out of line, and Paul is giving them the maximum treatment. *Θαρω* = *to have inner confidence based on a relaxed mental attitude*. When they criticized him, they complimented him. They emphasized the mouse. However, Paul's boldness was based upon an inhale of Bible doctrine.

Criticism of Paul

1. In the spiritual conflict, not all of the opposition comes from Satan and demons. When people get saved, they think all believers are nice.
2. Grace orientated believers receive some of the most vicious opposition from carnal, self righteous believers. This is where we will receive some of our greatest grief and suffering. The scar tissue of the soul cause those self righteous believers to have carnal viewpoint and mental attitude sins.
3. A case in question: Paul's ministry to the Corinthians is grace orientation to the maximum and he receives his greatest opposition from this same ministry. He gave them more grace than anyone else and he received more. The place of least opposition and the greatest grace moments is where there is the greatest opposition to grace. The more you develop a mental attitude of grace, then those out there will rip you apart. A marriage where an uninterested guy got interested in Bible doctrine, the more his wife opposed him. The more he became oriented to grace, the more she became a shrew. As soon as you get a little grace orientation, watch out. That dog that always wagged his tail is now going to bite you. **The son of the bond woman will persecute the son of the free woman.** When you become grace oriented the worse those around you behave. Those who have been consistent in their attitude toward you for years suddenly turn into monsters. Paul was grace oriented and he had a grace ministry to the Corinthians, and they turned on him.
4. Is the criticism valid? Paul is a mouse in the city limits; outside of the city limits, he is a lion. He is being accused of being a spiritual schizophrenia. Is he one way in and one way out? Is this a bonafide criticism? Read the 2nd chapter of Galatians, and you can tell that Paul could be tough in person, because grace was on the line. This is not something done by a mouse.
5. Do the Corinthians have any right to criticize Paul at all? He is an Apostle by spiritual gift and a pastor-teacher; and they owe him the response of listening to the Word; they must respect his authority. They have no right to criticize him at all. God knows all of the facts; God is just and fair; and when punishment is due, God can take care of that. Those with a communication gift, God lays it on double.
6. Why did they criticize Paul? Mental attitude reaction. They were vindictive, implacable, bitter, jealous, antagonistic.

Lesson #19 Mental Attitude Basic Bible Doctrine 2Cor. 10:2 circa 7/1/69

The human viewpoint adjustment to life. The doctrine of the mental attitude. We only completed the 1st verse of 1Cor. 10.

We will need to take this verse apart. Δεομαι = *to make a request, to ask*. Present middle indicative.

Indicative Mood

1. Paul appeals to the critics about their mental attitude. All criticism is based upon a mental attitude. Adverse criticism if based on mental attitude sins, and many times upon limited information and self righteousness.
2. Paul is making a pleas for grace orientation in the soul. He makes a request instead of demanding it.
3. Paul continues to be absent from Corinth because he does not want to come with a get tough policy. He is called a mouse in town and a lion out of town. Paul does not want to come into Corinth and be tough with them.
4. Paul wants to communicate doctrine under relaxed conditions ideal for teaching. That would be true for almost any pastor who lives. Like tonight, everyone seems to be very relaxed or half asleep).
5. Continual criticism gives Paul no freedom to go back to Corinth and teach. When you face such antagonism, it is difficult to teach; it is like being in front of a firing squad. You cannot teach antagonism. They may try a confrontation afterwards; Thieme gets confrontations with college students who think they know something, but they aren't. They try to build themselves up by asking questions that any jackass could ask. The ones who do the confronting were hostile, antagonistic, suffering from delusions of grandeur. It is no fun teaching those types.
6. Therefore, Paul writes instead of coming in person. Furthermore, God the Holy Spirit instructed Paul to write. These people are complaining about 1Corinthians. They scream, the criticize, they malign and judge. "You're out of fellowship" and now it is, "He is out of fellowship, he raised his voice against me." These types forget the Jesus Christ threw the moneychangers out of the Temple steps along with their tables of money. They have a hard time reconciling that with turn the other cheek. Some portions of the Word of God were written in the same way.
7. Paul has phased out, because of their scar tissue and legalism, and when there is a maximum amount of legalism and negative volition, then a grace orientated person like Paul is not going to come back. There are a lot of churches who function nowadays because the pastor cater to them. He preaches what they want to hear. Paul has phased them out, and he is not coming back until they get a lot of this straightened out.
8. This does not change Paul's love for the Corinthians, but it does change his modus operandi.
9. In the next phrase, Paul states that he will get tough if he has to come in person, and therefore, he won't come in person.

2Cor. 10:1-4: I, Paul, myself come in along side to help you, by the meekness and gentleness of Christ--I who am humble when face to face with you, but bold toward you when I am away!-- I beg of you that when I am present I may not have to show boldness with such confidence as I count on showing against some who suspect us of walking according to

the flesh. For though we walk in the flesh, we are not waging war according to the flesh. For the weapons of our warfare are not of the flesh but have divine power to destroy strongholds.

Θαρῶ the divine viewpoint is divided up into many areas of teaching, and divine viewpoint is to lay it on the line with the congregation. Paul is making a request that if he returns, he will not have to be bold or tough. And every time a pastor stands up and someone walks around and says, "I don't agree with that." What should we do? Drop dead? Fall at your feet and grovel? "I don't give...whether you agree with me or not; I am concerned on whether I am Biblically accurate or not. I am not answerable to you at all. Every now and again, we have to have these heart to heart chats" Paul was a great man, and if he was under scourging attacks from those in Corinth. If this makes sense to you in the English, maybe you should see someone to help you. Paul is used of God and all of these clucks are complaining about him.

The word for *think* is λογίζομαι = *to calculate, to with words in the mind to think, to conclude*. Present middle indicative: he is always thinking and he thinks in himself, comparing doctrines to doctrines.

The word for bold is not the same as the previous one. Θαρῶ = *a mental attitude toughness*. Paul was ready at any time to be mentally tough. The second word is an overt toughness. Paul will let the chips fall where they may. His critics are self righteous and they are legalistic, and they will resent his toughness. They will say, "Paul is out of fellowship."

their criticism: **as if we walked according to the flesh**. Σαρξ = *flesh, carnal, sin nature*. Κατὰ+σαρξ is walking according to the sin nature. Later we will have ἐν+σαρξ = *in the body*. Paul will turn their criticism on its head. It was impossible for Paul to be out of fellowship while writing 1Corinthians, as he was writing the Word of God. Therefore, their criticism is not valid. It is based upon the doctrine of inspiration and the modus operandi of Paul when teaching the Word of God. Paul will say, "You are right about one thing" which will be his semantic defense. A ballot in Berachah for or against the pastor. "If you are for the pastor leaving, check here; and against his staying, check here" is a semantical approach.

No word for *though*. It reads, we walk in the flesh. He was accused of walking according to the flesh. So, Paul is saying that he is still alive and walking around in a body. The soul of Paul is still in sarz, still in his body. The Corinthians could not take a lot of this in, because they had a lot of scar tissue on their thinking. A prepositional paronomasia. I am not operating under the old sin nature but I am living in the flesh. A preacher needs to be in his body in order to teach. It is a requirement. Paul switches this all around.

We do not war according to the old sin nature. The sin nature hooks up with human viewpoint and it is human viewpoint which makes them think that the first epistle was a result of carnality. **The equipment of our warfare is not fleshly** (sarkikos) [a reference to human viewpoint] **but of powers through the God face to face with the pulling down of**

fortified positions. Satan has a bunch of well laid-out positions, which are demolished by Bible doctrine. You cannot fight this fight without divine viewpoint. Human viewpoint is not enough.

Satan's fortified positions are destroyed by divine viewpoint which comes from the mentality of the soul and the constant inhale of Bible doctrine.

Mental attitude in the conflict, which is vv. 5–12:

present active participle of *to demolish* and what are demolished are *assumptions*.

2Cor. 10:5: **Demolishing assumptions**

We have difficulties and problems and we go from reality to monster world where we have mental attitude sins where we take our self righteous and legalism and religiosity and we become critical and get into maligning and judging. They are both human viewpoint positions. Going to divine viewpoint is the daily inhale of Bible doctrine. If you go to divine viewpoint, then on the other side, you get a fantastic victory on the spiritual side. This present active participle, which is based upon a command but you have free will. It is our attitude toward doctrine to determine if we will demolish assumptions or not—assumptions of dream world or monster world. We will exhale divine viewpoint out one side and everything will work out beautifully. If you go negative toward doctrine, you build up mental attitude sins and go into dream world or monster world.

and every elevated area [or proud obstacle] assumptions are mental attitude sins and they are in the soul. The proud obstacle is the sin of pride and they got feisty and began to fight back.

The highest virtue of the Christian life is Bible doctrine in the soul. **against doctrine and bringing into captivity [making a prisoner of] every thought to the obedience of Christ** . Either the thought is stored in the human spirit or it is operational in the human soul.

Casting down has to do with the rebound technique; you do not demolish assumptions apart from rebound. The casting down or the demolishing of assumptions starts with the rebound technique and the bringing into captivity is the daily intake of Bible doctrine. The inhale of Bible doctrine is divine viewpoint. It is only accomplished under the conditions of the filling of the Holy Spirit. This will result in the production of divine good. Failure to take in doctrine results in mental attitude sins building up scar tissue. Whatever good you do is evacuation from the old sin nature, human good. You cannot produce divine good if you have blocked up your soul with scar tissue.

2Co 10:5: **We destroy arguments and every lofty opinion raised against the knowledge of God, and take every thought captive to obey Christ,**

mental attitude counter attack. Having in readiness is launching in reserve a counter-attack. Having Bible doctrine in reserve ready to launch a counter attack.

2Cor. 10:6: holding in readiness

disobedience is negative volition. Παράκοη = *disobedience, negative volition toward doctrine, which creates the vacuum in the soul.*

Disobedient to Bible doctrine

1. Παράκοη means disregard, neglect or disobey doctrine.
2. The noun connotes an unwillingness to hear. It describes those who reject do.
3. Negative volition toward doctrine puts scar tissue on the left lung of the soul.
4. The result is a vacuum in the soul. This is described as mataiotês and into the vacuum comes Satanic doctrine.
5. It is the Satanic objective to establish human viewpoint in your soul. This means you are disoriented to the grace of God.
6. There must be a counter-attack against legalism.
7. Satan is pursuing a determined course to exalt himself above God. Through legalism and religion, he draws the believers into his trap.
8. The Satanic attack glorifies man but the grace counter attack glorifies God.
9. This counter attack can only be launched from the soul which takes in Bible doctrine daily. What are your soul reserves? What do you have to plug up the line. What do you have by way of counter offensive? If you cannot answer the question, "What about those who have never heard" you have no doctrine in reserve.

Holding in reserve readiness to counterattack all disobedience all human viewpoint on the occasion of your obedience [which is when you listen to Bible doctrine] **having been fulfilled** [aorist passive subjunctive]

5 Factors of Bible doctrine

1. You must realize its importance.
2. It is recognition of the authority of your pastor (when he is teaching).
3. Habitual use of the rebound technique.
4. The buildup of a divine viewpoint reserve.
5. The constant grace orientation and application to your life.

Reserves are necessary for a counterattack. Those who have battled all day are not able to go out and launch a vigorous counterattack. Fresh troops are needed. This passage should challenge us concerning our own battle reserves.

2Co 10:6 **being ready to punish every disobedience, when your obedience is complete.**

Lesson #20 Mental Attitude Basic Bible Doctrine 2Cor. 10:7 circa 7/8/69

There is a lot of moving around.

Someone is playing a piano when a Bible class is going on. Bob wants to talk to them personally. You can read a passage like this until the smoke comes out of your ears and you still don't know what is going on.

All human viewpoint comes from scar tissue of the soul. When matiotês opens up, darkness comes into the soul. The origin of human viewpoint is the vacuum opening up. One problem is superficial examination of others. It is impossible for you to look at a person and be totally and completely accurate. God can but we cannot. Our evaluation is superficial at best.

The outward appearance is the external appearance; and we are used to looking at things from a superficial standpoint.

Corrected translation

1. This is an affirmative statement, not a question.
2. Scar tissue on the soul causes superficial standards to be developed.
3. Human viewpoint is a part of the superficial evaluation.
4. Evaluation must be based on doctrine and divine viewpoint.
5. Human viewpoint and scar tissue disorient the believer to the plan of God, the grace of God and to the function of that plan in time.

God is using the Apostle Paul and just as obviously, the Corinthians have made a completely superficial evaluation of Paul. Paul is one of the greatest believers ever, and here, the Corinthians thought he was out of fellowship when he was writing Scripture to them.

2Cor. 10:7: **You are in the habit of looking at things from external appearances. If anyone has confidence regarding himself that he belongs to Christ,...**

They think they are just as qualified to give their opinion as anyone else. This does not give them license or any commission or any right or authority to evaluate the Apostle Paul or anyone else. Keep your nose out of everyone else's business; you are not called upon to judge, to malign, to criticize, etc. If ever a man was in fellowship, it was Paul when writing 1Corinthians. When he discusses carnality, past or future is all he can discuss when it comes to his own. A self-justification for maligning, judging and criticizing others. Sins of the tongue are some of the worst sins.

Τουτο λογισεσθω = *keep on thinking this. ...keep on concluding this:...* Present middle imperative of λογιζομαι, which means he keeps thinking until he comes to a conclusion. Paul's critics are all in the top circle; they all are believers. **...even as he is Christ's, so are we.**

They are both groups of believers. Those criticizing are out of fellowship, those they are criticizing are not. The pastor-teachers are supposed to be in authority.

If you have been in Berachah over 5 times, you have been critical of Bob. It is inevitable that you will be critical. As a believer priest, you need to respect the authority of the communicator. You can do this without any loss of face and it is a part of your normal inhale and exhale of the soul. If not, you will distort your priesthood. Once you set yourself up, you will be critical of the communicator and others; and you will find yourself a mutual admiration society somewhere and both of these things are detrimental to you spiritually. There is no master slave relationship here. It does mean that basically, you get your feeding here. If you don't like Bob's cooking, you go somewhere else. Bob feeds you and eventually, he will come up with something you don't like. So what. Maybe you don't understand it. Maybe it hits you too hard. Maybe it is the way it is served; served hot and you think it should be cold. The presentation bothers you. As a believer priest, you have a right to disagree, but privacy says, keep it to yourself. That these Corinthians were not buying into everything is not the issue; they are not all in maturity; they are not all in adolescence; but they are in various stages of growth. When it comes to maligning or criticizing a communicator. In any case, you just keep your mouth shut. At some point, everyone gets the hoof in mouth disease. A church like Berachah, it is fine. If you are critical on a regular basis, then you are a troublemaker. A teacher of doctrine is up for double discipline. It is our concern to get doctrine from the pulpit. That is where our concern stops. If we are on positive volition toward the message, we wade through a lot of things. When there is a delectable piece of fish and it has bones, you take them out and put them aside on the plate. A good smart priest just puts his bones on the plate and doesn't worry about it.

Some churches are famous for being bully churches. 5 or 6 people call you up and tell you what you should and shouldn't teach. Don't offend the tongues people; they are great givers. Bob didn't like the deal to begin with at one place; he was in the midst of a heat wave with a lousy air conditioner. He never heard so many instructions in all his life. When he began to realize this, bob got on his high horse and told them what they could do. A lot of blank looks from so many. The tragedy is, it is a well-known church, and those people are not getting doctrine, even if it is being taught. Believer priests are able to represent themselves before God. Believers do not have the right to judge others. Col. 3 is all about the privacy of the priesthood.

Who has the right to judge? **If I should boast** [= making an assertion from authority; and it can be an expression of pride as well as an assertion from authority] [or, *make some positive assertions*] **concerning my authority**, Paul has a communication gift. Paul has the authority and they are going to say that Paul is just using his authority as a bully. They are the true bullies, but they accuse Paul of the same thing. These are intelligent critics. They are going to neutralize Paul. They are going to make what Paul is doing sound like the greatest thing in the world. Corinth is minus a pastor, so they are without a pastor and they are without authority. Titus is going to go there carrying 2Corinthians. You get away with this behavior if the congregation is thinking human viewpoint. **...which the Lord has given us for...** Εἰς is a result proposition. Spiritual advancement, growth. The negative side is, **...not for your demolition...** = καθαρησις.

Reasons why a person should not judge a pastor

1. Constant criticism and maligning a pastor undermines his authority.
2. Loss of authority neutralizes the effective communication of doctrine, which is divine viewpoint.
3. No doctrine means no soul breathing.
4. No soul breathing means that scar tissue will build up.
5. Scar tissue means no functioning under the plan of God.
6. Human viewpoint means disorientation to the grace of God.
7. Human viewpoint looks on the outside.

There needs to be the constant communication of doctrine in church. ...I will not be ashamed [for my actions]. Same old story—the preacher gets tough and they think that he has no love. So it would be a setback for grace if Paul did this.

2Co 10:7–8: Look at what is before your eyes. If anyone is confident that he is Christ's, let him remind himself that just as he is Christ's, so also are we. For even if I boast a little too much of our authority, which the Lord gave for building you up and not for destroying you, I will not be ashamed.

That I may not appear to attempt to frighten you with my letters [which could refer to other letters which are circulating about

Summary

1. Human viewpoint attacks doctrine, always.
2. The communicator is attacked.
3. Divine viewpoint of 1Cor., even though it is very hard on them, it is an expression of God's love and Paul's personal consideration of them.
4. To have sins and carnality exposed is beneficial. It leads to rebound and prevents scar tissue of the soul. Paul catalogued the sins of the soul.
5. Divine viewpoint produces a desire for Bible doctrine; desire for Bible doctrine will remove scar tissue if it exists.
6. Paul is using his authority to lead carnal believers toward rebound and orienting other believers to God's grace.

2Co 10:9 I do not want to appear to be frightening you with my letters.

This could refer to Galatians, also a tough letter.

Εφημι = *stern, vehement*. This is a very strong criticism of Paul; he is too harsh. They go on the ridicule his personal appearance and his speaking ability. From the message; down with the message to down with the messenger.

2Co 10:10 For they say, "His letters are weighty and strong, but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech of no account."

Paul's letters are considered stern and vehement, but he is weak in his bodily presence. Every great man did his best when healthy. Stonewall Jackson is an example of a vigorous, healthy man. Robert E. Lee was as well. Many great leaders have great health. Julius Cæsar who did have epilepsy, but it did not seem to affect him. However, Paul was not physically strong. Human viewpoint is that health is absolutely necessary.

The acts of Paul and Thekla describe Paul as short, bald, bow legged, with a hooked nose and meeting eyebrows. Add his fevers and eye trouble. In the 4th century, he was called a balding hook-nosed Galilean (he was not a Galilean, but that was a term of derision for Christians). You can communicate doctrine without having good health. Bob had the toughest speaking engagement in Oklahoma, sickly, but it was a great response. The Apostle Paul did not cut much of a figure. So what; that is human viewpoint. Divine viewpoint tells us that these physical characteristics were not issues. Divine viewpoint says, so what if he was not attractive. God does not use people who are over 6' and attractive. **By the grace of God, I am what I am.** Only human viewpoint takes a person's appearance and makes anything out of it. Bob went to see Dr. Barnhouse and he was a fabulous speaker. Some character said of Barnhouse, "Isn't he a pretty boy" so Thieme put his fingers on this guy's shoulders and turned him around, Paul was physically unattractive. They attacked the way Paul looked and spoke. They said his speech was contemptible. This means, *it is out from nothing; it is of no account.* The start with his message, go to his person, and then speak of his delivery. Paul is said to have a high, squeaky voice. It does not matter if he squeaked or wheezed or what he did.

Paul looks at life from the divine viewpoint and is consistent.

2Co 10:11 **Let such a person understand that what we say by letter when absent, we do when present.**

Of what sort we are by word and letter when absent, such also indeed when present. If we show up in person, we will be just as tough as we would be by letter, depending upon what is actually necessary. Paul was not tough when he first showed up the Corinth because none of this stuff developed. When Paul was in Corinth in Acts 18, he was sweet and nice because he had no reason to be anything else. Paul is saying, whatever the situation calls for, I will do it. It all depends upon what the situation calls for.

Paul's critics have a mutual admiration society going on.

2Co 10:12 **Not that we dare to classify or compare ourselves with some of those who are commending themselves. But when they measure themselves by one another and compare themselves with one another, they are without understanding.**

We would not dare to judge ourselves worthy as some there, or to compare us favorably to some of you. His critics see themselves as better than Paul and Paul is worthy of criticism. They use Paul as a basis for patting each other on the back. They measure themselves by themselves. There are critics who compare themselves to other critics and

they pat each other on the back. Mutual admiration society. They are built upon the targets of their criticism. **They are not sensible or wise.** These types have scar tissue.

The Concept of Mutual Admiration Societies and How they are Formed

1. There must be a rejection of Bible doctrine which puts scar tissue on the left bank of the soul.
2. With the formation of scar tissue on the left bank of the soul means that there must be a formation of mental attitude sins (envy, jealousy, antagonism, bitterness, vindictive, implacable). These sets of people have their own mental attitude sins toward Paul, and are therefore critical of Paul. This is shallow and based upon a mutual target.
3. The members must not only build scar tissue but they must entertain the doctrines of demons (the doctrines formed from the darkness in their soul). "Tell me how nice I am and I will tell you how great you are." They will stimulate and assuage the mutual admiration society. There must be a pseudo standard.
4. Everyone must have the same brand of self righteousness. This strengthens the bond of fellowship among them.
5. There must be frustrations among these people. Many of them probably are mad at Paul because he did not speak to them or give them enough face time. Paul stepped on the toes of some of them. This mutual admiration society takes up the slack here after Paul has stepped on their toes.
6. They began with a target like Paul, but Paul is too far away, so they had to find new targets in their own church, so they found some grace orientated believers to attack. They need some nearby targets.
7. If all of these things are pulled together and organized over a period of time, they will be the source of all human viewpoint for awhile.

Lesson #21 Mental Attitude Basic Bible Doctrine 2Cor. 10:7 circa 7/15/69

Eph. 4:22: **to put off your old self, which belongs to your former manner of life and is constantly depraved through deceitful desires [lust pattern of the sin nature],**

αποτιθιμι = *to put off from the ultimate source of yourself, according to the manner of life.*
As an unbeliever, we are controlled by the sin nature; and the believer out of fellowship imitates his old ways, as an unbeliever. The believer in fellowship imitates God.

The old man is the sin nature; God did not create the sin nature; He had nothing to do with the old sin nature. He is not the author of sin, the promoter of sin, and He has no connection with sin.

Old Sin Nature

1. The sin nature is the source of spiritual death. Rom. 5:12 Eph. 2:1

2. The sin nature is perpetuated by human birth. Psalm 51:5 1Tim. 2:13–14
3. Believer continues to have a sin nature even after the new birth. 1John 1:8 1Cor. 3:1
4. Believer out of fellowship is called carnal. Rom. 7:14
5. Old sin nature frustrates bonafide production in phase II. Rom. 7:15
6. Nomenclature: flesh (Gal. 5:16), old man (Eph. 4:22 Col. 3:9), sin (1John 1:8), heart (Jer. 17:9 Matt. 12:34–35 15:19),
7. Sin nature has an essence. Rom. 6:6 Heb. 12:1 Isa. 64:6 Rom. 8:8
8. Solution to the old sin nature always involves judgement; sins are judged on the cross and then, in phase II, sins are judged by the believer; final judgment at the great white throne.

Phthêrô

The lust it is essential for the believer to have soul orientation, which means doctrine in the soul and grace orientation and mastery over the details of life and capacity for love in all 3 categories.

Eph 4:23 **and to be renewed in the spirit [breathing] of your minds,**

spirit can refer to the human spirit, the Holy Spirit, or *breath*; and you receive restoration by the breathing of your mind. Your thoughts rattle around in the vouç. Avavnow = *to renew again and again, to restore*. Passive voice; receive restoration, and it must continue for scar tissue to be removed.

Recovery from Scar tissue

1. In the recovery from scar tissue is the rebound technique. That is the first step. Confess it, forget it and isolate it. This needs to be a continuous process.
2. The filling of the Holy Spirit occurs after rebound; and it is necessary for learning doctrine. You are filled with the Spirit after rebound, but you can be filled with the Spirit and not learn doctrine. Doctrine just does not float out of the air into your brain. 1Cor. 2:9–14
3. Habitual and continual exposure to the teaching of doctrine by a pastor-teacher. Categorical teaching and expository teaching.
4. Rebound prior to any Bible teaching situation. When you listen to the Word of God you are in fellowship. You can get out of fellowship anywhere in 5 seconds, so you need to rebound again.
5. The constant decision to recognize doctrine in your life. There is no such thing as a one-shot decision. You must keep on keeping on. As far as Bob is concerned, those on tapes in Houston need to be in class. You cannot easily crank information out to empty air. Bob likes a live audience. It is impossible for tapes to exist without a live audience. Without Berachah, Bob would shut down and move to Miami. Those of you who are here tonight, in most cases, constitute a live audience.

Present passive infinitive. Restored again and again; infinitive refers to God's purpose. Instrumental case of πνευμα = *breathing*. This breathing occur in the mind, where you keep your thoughts.

Eph 4:24 **and to put on the new self, created according to the norm or standard of the likeness of God in true righteousness and holiness.**

Ενδύω = *to put on something on the inside*. The soul puts on clothes. **That you yourself clothe yourself, the new man.** The new man is Bible doctrine in the soul. In Colossians, putting off the old man is the sin nature.

the old nature and the new nature fighting back and forth, but Bob can't find a new nature in the Bible.

Dr. Ironsides and the dog illustration to the Indians. Bob cannot figure out how it works. Rebound, crash program to learn doctrine, etc. It is hard ot take an illustration like this and set up a recovery system. The old man and the new man. Καινος = *new in species*. It is put with ανθρωπος = *mankind*. The adjective new in species with man. Bible doctrine is what is new and what is important. According to the standard of God.

Κιτιζω = *to reduce from a state of chaos*. The soul is in chaos until you get some doctrine in it. The aorist can be used to refer to points of time. Inner happiness, relaxed mental attitude, and there is a word for righteousness δικαιοσυνη = *generosity, function of God's grace; fairness, justice*. Not righteousness. When you have doctrine in the soul and are filled with the Spirit, then you all of your exhales toward others are in grace. You do not treat others based upon how scrounge they are. Every believer has the potential of being a monster. You must function on the basis of who and what you are. Doctrine in the soul leads to grace orientation. Doctrine in your soul means you are relaxed toward other people; it is not based upon what they can do for you or what you can get from them. However, no doctrine turned loose mental attitude sins. They produce scar tissue on the soul. As you close the vent and this stuff comes through, it comes through under pressure. Finally, all of it comes out the sin nature. Mental attitude sins are expressed with revenge tactics, etc. δικαιοσυνη is expressed through doctrine in the soul. You operate in grace, as Jesus Christ did in His humanity.

In the sphere of devotion to the truth (doctrine)

but that you yourselves enter into the soul the new man having been called into being according to the standard of God in the sphere of grace orientation and devotion to the truth.

Expression of divine viewpoint, forgive as Christ forgave.

2Co 10:13 **But we will not boast beyond limits, but will boast only with regard to the area of influence God assigned to us, to reach even to you.**

Κακαομαι = *to boast*. They would use the human viewpoint for measuring people in non-Biblical standards. The *measure of the canon*. This is doctrine from the God. Θεονευστος = *God-breathed*. God the Holy Spirit puts doctrine into the soul, fired out God's complete and coherent message to us, without changing the vocabulary of the writer or their personality or writing style. Bible doctrine is the only criterion. They give him human viewpoint and he fires back divine viewpoint. This is a command for the crash program to learn doctrine.

2Co 10:14 **For we are not overextending ourselves, as though we did not reach you. We were the first to come all the way to you with the gospel of Christ.**

Εφνικενεομαι = *to extend, to over extend*. We do not reach out to you and overextend ourselves. They stayed with the pertinent and accurate doctrine. They did not go beyond the gospel into legalism. He did not add falsehoods to his teaching. However, the Corinthians of overextended toward Paul, using their human standards. It is a perfect illustration.

One of the mental attitude is cruelty and they have been very cruel to Paul. They are very unhappy. They have mental attitude sins which are extended toward Paul and they lack capacity to love.

Then is some sarcasm. They complain that Paul is not coming back to Corinth, and he speaks of Corinth as the end of the world.

When Paul came to Corinth, in his soul was doctrine and grace orientation. He had inner happiness and a relaxed mental attitude. He had a mastery of the details of life. From this position, he could declare the gospel from a position of strength. He had the capacity to love them. He was not impressed by the things that they had. Paul treated them in grace, but they have not replied in kind.

A pastor that Thieme knows, and he goes from church to church, but he only teaches what they like, because he wants the congregations to like him. He is a chameleon; he takes on the characteristics they want to see.

They are applying divine viewpoint and not human. He does not seek popularity through human viewpoint. Their faith needs to grow up, which is faith rest. Πιστις can mean faith rest or doctrine. They receive the growth and they will keep on growing. No one has ever exploited maximum spiritual growth. They will be enlarged according to doctrine.

2Co 10:15 **We do not boast beyond limit in the labors of others. But our hope is that as your faith increases, our area of influence among you may be greatly enlarged,**

v. 16 is the production of grace. Paul took the word to them so that they can take it further out.

2Co 10:16 so that we may preach the gospel in lands beyond you, without boasting of work already done in another's area of influence.

Paul is saying in effect that it is easy to prepare gimmicks and to do things which are popular; but the result will not be growth, evangelism, missionary work, etc. Only doctrine will move someone out to the mission fields. Now, people get pumped up over emotions; they hear about something which tittivates their emotions and they want to move there for that reason.

2Co 10:17 "Let the one who boasts, boast in the Lord."

we have *κακαομαι* again, but it does mean *to glorify* and it could be rendered that way all the way through. At some point, God may take you and your doctrine and move you to another spot. Bob thought about it many times; thought it would be interested if God took all of Berachah and scattered them to the 4 winds. He could write books on it. It could happen. Wwill could happen at any time; maybe after we disarm more. All survivors will be scattered, and all you can carry out of town will be doctrine. There is a reason. The people who were consistently day by bay taking in doctrine could deal with things, even though the details of life were gone.

Once you become mentally ill, you cannot be used of the Lord. Bob won't deal will mentally ill people. Once they get psychotic, they have had it. They can be non compes mentis and filled with the Spirit and get nowhere at all. Constantly Bob is trying to get people to a psycho ward. He could prepare a lot of doctrine in that time to people who will study it and want it. Bob has spent time in psycho wards and every now and again he runs into someone with a little appeture left. There is a tremendous amount of national and international upheaval. Some will survive.

Keep on glorying is the constant intake of doctrine.

2Co 10:18 For it is not the one who commends himself who is approved, but the one whom the Lord commends.

V. 18 is he victory of divine viewpoint. People criticize in order to get into the limelight. Paul was a big man to knock down. Knock him down and you are a big man. The Lord commends those who are breathing spiritually.

Lesson #22 Spirituality Basic Bible Doctrine Eph. 5:1 circa 7/22/69

Spirituality is when God the Holy Spirit controls your life when He does. Spirituality is not uttering phoney phrases and observing taboos and being moral. Bob was out in LA and these people must have crawled out of holes. One guy wore all black and showed up and asked if people could smoke while listening. Bob said they could smoke or stand on their heads. When this guy told that Thieme was a list of taboos, Thieme threw him out.

You cannot do anything to be spirituality. If you hang out with a crowd and you are both shocked at the same things, then you think you are spiritual. Has nothing to do with it. If there is anything which is phoney is someone determining who is spiritual and who is not, based upon their grooming, dress and over behavior.

Don't you try to figure out who is spiritual or not; it is none of your business. You will learn after awhile that you just keep short accounts with God. Everyone has some special area of holiness, some place where they are so good, it hurts, and they all run to this place when they think they are about to get the rug pulled out from under them. Instead of starting out on pseudo spirituality, Bob will spare us that for a couple weeks.

You will become more relaxed; you will not become critical of other believers. You see someone walking out of a bar or take a drink, and it may get you all a-flustered. You are not the person to decide who is filled with the Spirit and who is not. You do have the opportunity to examine your own life because the filling of the Holy Spirit is the key to the inhale of Bible doctrine.

You study either exegetically or categorically. Most of tonite will be spend to the exegetical approach, next Tuesday on the categorical teaching, and the third Tuesday on the false teaching of spirituality.

Anyone can be a follower of God, and anyone can do that and at least think that they are following God. Some people have gone to Bible conferences up in the mountains and they have thrown faggots on the fire after hearing a stirring message. However, when you find out what this verse really says, the first thing you must decide is, *I can't do it*. Like everything else in the Christian life, it requires a supernatural way of doing this or that. However, any believer can do it.

The word for *to be* is not the word found here. The word here is γίνομαι as a present active imperative. This is a command to all believers. We are to become something we were not before. The next word is followers, which is μιμητης which means *imitators*. Here is where you begin to understand that you cannot quite do what needs to be done here. Grace always takes the impossible and makes it possible; grace always takes a situation totally out of hand and brings it into order.

First Command

1. As members of the family of God, we should bear the family resemblance. Every believer is a member of the family of God. People there is always a relationship and parents pass down genes and it is passed down. Sometimes genes skip a generation; Bobby looks just like Bob's father. Parents get mad at their kids because they discover that their kids are stubborn, but it is because they are stubborn as well. It is the principle of family resemblance. We have been born into the family of God. We are the only people who have been born twice. One of the 34 things which happened to us is, we were born again. We now have a new set of characteristics from spiritual birth. If we have normal growth and the erection of

the edification complex, we will have a family resemblance. We inhale spiritual air (300 cc) and we exhale (150 cc), and what remains is residual air. Satan has a false edification complex and a system of pseudo happiness with an emphasis on emotion. Instead of the relaxed mental attitude, he has the antithesis of that, the mental attitude sins producing self-induced misery. On top of that, where there is the capacity of love, there is pseudo love and slavery to the details of life.

2. Christ as God is the manifest person of the Trinity. John 1:18 6:46 1Tim. 6:16 1John 4:12 . He set the pattern for the filling of the Spirit. He is manifest in the Old Testament through various Christophenes; and today as the God-man. He was the most perfectly adjusted person in human history. Perfect adjustment; perfect edification; always filled with the Spirit, minus 3 hours on the cross where the Spirit forsook Him. Luke 2 40–52: **And the child grew and became strong, filled with wisdom. And the favor of God was upon him. Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the Feast of the Passover. And when he was twelve years old, they went up according to custom. And when the feast was ended, as they were returning, the boy Jesus stayed behind in Jerusalem. His parents did not know it, but supposing him to be in the group they went a day's journey, but then they began to search for him among their relatives and acquaintances, and when they did not find him, they returned to Jerusalem, searching for him. After three days they found him in the temple, sitting among the teachers, listening to them and asking them questions. And all who heard him were amazed at his understanding and his answers. And when his parents saw him, they were astonished. And his mother said to him, "Son, why have you treated us so? Behold, your father and I have been searching for you in great distress." And he said to them, "Why were you looking for me? Did you not know that I must be in my Father's house?" And they did not understand the saying that he spoke to them. And he went down with them and came to Nazareth and was submissive to them. And his mother treasured up all these things in her heart. And Jesus increased in wisdom and in stature and in grace with God and man.** There is the physical growth of his body and the development of the soul; the entire breathing process of the soul. His mentality, emotion, consciousness; no scar tissue in his soul ever. Undoubtedly, that had a lot to do with His physical development. Perfect health. Strongest body in the world. He was never worried, never disturbed, never upset. He had physical growth and soul development. κρατω = *to grow strong in self-discipline, in concentration, in coordination*. Imperfect tense means he kept on doing it. This was his increased spiritual strength. As a 4 year old, He could understand 50 points of doctrine; and He was teaching doctrine in the synagogue at age 10. Great soul breathing. He had great inner happiness and a relaxed mental attitude; agape love; and He had mastery of the details of the life. As a result of all this, He had ἐπίγνωσις, a full knowledge of God and God's plan. **And the child grew and received strength...** He received the ability to think and to concentrate. Present passive participle He was filled with grace, but wisdom comes first; daily inhale and exhale. Some will never be exhaled and He had the entire structure of edification indicated when it says, **And He was filled with grace and grace kept on being upon Him.** Jesus alone stands for the humanity of Christ in the hypostatic union. Προκοτω = *to cut a path*

through the jungle; to advance and to make progress in a difficult area for movement. Because of the filling of the Holy Spirit and because of His spiritual growth, He was able to make progress in the devil's world. This tells us that He was the strongest, most muscular man to ever live. These paintings of Him weighing about 118 lbs. is ridiculous; they are so out of phase with the Word of God. There never was a man as strong as Jesus Christ. He picked up the table changers and threw them out and the tables with the money on it and tossed it all. This was a physical feat. He grew spiritually and He grew physically. This is the childhood. He grew in favor? This is the word for grace. He grew in grace. Παρά = *from the immediate source of God and man.* God provided the doctrine. People taught Him. God provided the doctrine and there were human communicators of doctrine.

3. Believers are commanded here to become imitators of the manifest person of the Godhead. Jesus is Who we imitate. Gal. 4:19 Christ is formed in us.
4. This command to imitate Christ can only be executed by the filling of the Holy Spirit. Philip. 1:2–021 Eph. 3:16
5. This is compatible with the Holy Spirit and the Church Age. John 7:39 16:14 1Cor. 6:19–20
6. The filling of the Holy Spirit produces the character of Christ. Gal. 5:22–23 2Cor. 3:3
7. This fulfills the command of Eph. 5:1, which is **Keep on becoming imitators of God.** It is similar to Eph. 5:22, where we are told be **keep on being filled with the Spirit.** Two sides of the same coin.

Eph. 5:1: **Therefore become imitators of God, as beloved children.**

Our Lord is called the Beloved and we are said to be accepted in the Beloved and we are called beloved for this reason because we are the objects of His perfect love. Τεκνον = *children.* This is the command for spirituality.

The next verse gives a similar command. Another present active imperative. **Keep on walking around in the sphere of love.** This present active imperative is related to the previous one.

Eph. 5:2: **And walk in love, as Christ loved us and gave himself up for us, a fragrant offering and sacrifice to God.**

Doctrine of Walking

1. Walking depicts the modus operandi of phase II and the modus vivendi of grace.
2. Walking requires taking one step at a time. Not 5. You cannot walk without going one step at a time. Some live way in the past or way in the future and you never get to now. Rom. 14 the Christian life requires one day at a time.
3. The mechanics of walking. The biped is off balance for a moment. There is an instant when you are off-balance. Balance is recovered immediately by putting the

foot forward and then down. Bob had to learn to walk again after a football injury. A believer is stabilized by filling of the Holy Spirit and soul-breathing.

4. In the New Testament there are 3 spheres of walking: faith rest technique (2Cor. 5:7, which is a left-bank exhale of doctrine). Doctrine teaches us to put the problem in God's hands. Let God handle it. Prayer is a left-bank exhale. Faith rest is a left-bank exhale. Love for God is also a left-bank exhale. In the sphere of doctrine is the second, which is found 3John 3. Gal. 5:16 we walk in the Spirit. Walking in the Spirit is amplified in the New Testament.
5. 7 walks describe walking in the Spirit:
 - a. Walking in the light. 1John 1:5
 - b. In love Eph. 5:2
 - c. In newness of life Rom. 6:4
 - d. Worthy of the vocation Eph. 4:1
 - e. Worthy of the Lord Col. 1:10
 - f. Honestly as in the day Rom. 13:13
 - g. In good works Eph. 4:10 (production of good works).

Luke 2 tells us how Christ loved us. He took in doctrine daily; He was filled with the Spirit. Residual doctrine in the soul; He built up grace in the soul. He had inner happiness; He had an relaxed mental attitude. We are told to love as Christ loved us. He had mastery of the details of life. When Satan showed Him the kingdoms of the world, he said, "Negative." He loved us and gave Himself for us. This comes right out of the old sin nature. When Christ died for us, we were His enemies.

The rest of this passage is taken care of on Sunday mornings.

Doctrine of Morality

Some are under the delusion that morality is spirituality. When we are out of fellowship, the Holy Spirit controls and we are spiritual. The unbeliever does not have the indwelling Holy Spirit; he has a soul. He is a dichotomos being. He is capable of morality. Both are capable of being moral or immoral. The filling of the Holy Spirit belongs to the believer only. The unbeliever cannot be filled with the Spirit and he is never commanded to do anything related to the Spirit. Some moral believers if they are not too religious can be pretty nice people. There are a lot of sins which are not immoral.

1. Christianity is not a morality but a relationship to God through Christ. This was the thrust of liberalism, and they tried to make liberalism into a form of morality. It is a relationship that we recognize that we are a sinner needing salvation. Sometimes the evangelists aim at the wrong sins and they have a tent filled with moral people; so when they talk about sin, it does not reach them.
2. Morality is a by-product of Christianity. The filling of the Holy Spirit produces a lot of things including morality.

3. Morality in itself has no spiritual dynamics. The unbeliever can be moral; the carnal believer can be moral. The spiritual believer can be moral. Spiritual dynamics are in soul breathing and the filling of the Holy Spirit.
4. The dynamics of the Holy Spirit are found in the filling of the Holy Spirit and knowledge of Bible doctrine.
5. Morality is absolutely essential for the orderly functioning of the human race under the divine institutions. Without it, the human race could not survive as an extension of the angelic conflict. God has set up moral laws which are just as real as the law of gravity. The law of morality keeps Satan from destroying the human race. The basic concept of morality in history is human freedom. The second is marriage, family and nationalism. All under attack from cosmos diabolicus.
6. Morality cannot provide salvation or spirituality. The rich young ruler illustrates this. 90% of Christianity is confused about this. Salvation is faith in Jesus Christ; spirituality comes by confessing sins to God privately.
7. Morality has as its basic source a law of God which is as understandable and as functionable as the law of gravity. Morality has been understood throughout history just as people know the hours of daylight and darkness. It is in our souls from teaching, from law and order. This is why India and Africa have been so far behind the 8-ball and why imperialism was good at that time. They brought law and order to the bush. This was a great period of evangelism and millions of blacks and browns are in heaven today because of British imperialism. It is a great thing, not a bad thing. There are some evils, but that is because it involves people. Communism has rewritten history like the last century was the dark ages. We in the last century had a great period of human history. God knew that in the 19th century that there would be millions of Africa and India who would go on positive volition toward God; and missionaries could not go in until the British went in to establish law and order. The worst thing which happened was the British leaving. Rhodesian and South Africa are two of the greatest countries today.
8. Morality is designed by God for the perpetuation and the survival of the human race and its evangelization in every generation.

Lesson #23

Spirituality Basic Bible Doctrine Eph. 5:14

circa 7/29/69

3 analogies: sleep, light and death.

This is a rare sort of quote; it is a paraphrase.

Εγείρω = *to be excited, to be aroused, to be awakened*. The believer being asleep here is the believer who is out of fellowship. These are believers on negative volition toward doctrine and they need to be awakened to positive volition toward doctrine. This is a command for positive volition toward doctrine. Occasionally you will run into believers who are positive toward doctrine, but it does not do them any good. Even though a believer may have a positive desire for Bible doctrine, there may be a problem. Wanting doctrine is not enough unless you know how to be filled with the Holy Spirit.

Obviously, even a person who is positive toward doctrine, it is still not enough if the believer is out of fellowship. Being carnal, there is no way for him to take in doctrine.

Eph 5:11–14: **Take no part in the unfruitful works of darkness, but instead expose them. For it is shameful even to speak of the things that they do in secret. But when anything is exposed by the light, it becomes visible, for anything that becomes visible is light. Therefore it says, "Keep on being awake, O sleeper, and arise from the dead, and Christ will shine on you."**

Then there is the command **Rise from the dead**. This is not the resurrection, because it is a command. God will raise us from the dead; that does not require our volition.

You can ooze sincerity and it does not mean a thing; it will not take you 5 steps into the Christian life. Many think it to be a Christian virtue. When you see someone oozing sincerity, you wonder, what are they trying to hide. You have to decide what is important. It is one of the greatest forms of self-deception. In order to get around this, you must rise from the dead, which is in the plural. **Rise from the deaths**.

7 Types of Death

1. Physical death. Philip. 1:21
2. Spiritual death Eph. 2:1 Rom. 5:12 6:23
3. Heb. 9:23 Rev. 20:12–15 the 2nd death; the Lake of Fire
4. Rom. 6 Positional death
5. Operational death James 2:26
6. Sexual death Rom. 4:17–21 Heb. 11:11–12
7. Temporal death; the carnal believer. Luke 15:24, 32 Rom. 5:6 8:6, 13 Eph. 5:14 James 1:15 Rev. 3:1

The Greek says **Stand up from deaths**. 2nd analogy is the filling of the Holy Spirit; Christ giving light is the edification complex (3rd analogy). Residual doctrine: grace orientation, relaxed mental attitude, capacity to love, mastery of the details of life are the floors of the edification complex, which is built from residual doctrine.

Filling of the Holy Spirit from beware that you walk accurately. Present active indicative; walking with accuracy. There must be doctrine in the soul. 3 things are involved. Filling of the Holy Spirit, communication of Bible doctrine; the believer's positive volition. These factors are involved with walking with accuracy.

Sophos is the residual doctrine left in the soul. The filling of the Spirit is necessary so the pastor can communicate. Necessary for the foundation of Bible doctrine. Inhale and exhale of doctrine and the production of divine good.

Eph 5:15–16: **Look carefully then how you walk [walk with accuracy], not as unwise but as wise, making the best use of the time, because the days are evil.**

V. 16 relates this all to time. *Ezagoreō*=to buy out from. In our lives, we have a certain amount of days, and we are to buy a certain amount of days from this amount. This requires the filling of the Holy Spirit in order to buy these days. Time can only be purchased by the filling of the Spirit. This is our only capital. The emphasis is upon days.

One Day at a Time

1. The believer oriented to grace regards every day alike. Rom. 14:5–6
2. Every day is a gracious gift from the Lord to be purchased for the Lord. Eph. 5:16 the context tells us that we can buy this time by being filled with the Spirit. When you are filled with the Spirit, that time has been purchased. You might even be able to log time sleeping.
3. The only time we possess to glorify God on the earth is the number of days given to us in phase II. James. 4:13–15
4. God provides the capital to make each day count for grace James 4:6
5. Every day is a special day in phase II; no one day is more holy than another. There is no authorization in the Word of God to make Sunday a special day e.g. the operation of blue laws, which we are struck with even in Houston. No government, local or state has the right to shut down any business on any day; that is strictly up to the individual business. When Bob thinks of all the cluck ministers advocating more blue laws... If they can persuade people to work and to buy, it is not the business of any government to stop that. This kind of thing is a travesty; it is blasphemy. The Sabbath is Saturday and in some retail it is a big business day. The observation of the Sabbath in the Old Testament was to teach people grace. They worked all the rest of the week.
6. Each day the believer is to avoid mental attitude sins which produce self-induced misery.
7. Psalm 103 God only has one chance to show us grace in suffering, which He can do in time.

Filling of the Holy Spirit related to the will of God. If you want Bible doctrine, it is God's will for us to inhale doctrine. Everywhere you turn, everything depends upon the filling of the Holy Spirit. The will of God is delineated by Bible doctrine and you cannot know God's will apart from doctrine in the soul, which you cannot put there without being filled with the Spirit to begin with. It is interesting that Satan takes the will of God and the filling of the Holy Spirit and distorts them. Filling of the Holy Spirit and the will of God go together.

Let's say you get some doctrine in your soul and the will of God in your mind.

Ἀφρων = *stupid*. *Συνιαίμι* = *to assemble the facts, to understand categorically the will of God*. This brings us to the issue in v. 18. Drunkenness is forbidden.

Eph. 5:17: **Therefore do not be foolish, but understand what the will of the Lord is.**

The Bible does not forbid drinking, but it does forbid drunkenness. Drunkenness is simply alcohol controlling the inner life. When anything like alcohol controls the life, apart from the Holy Spirit, there is a problem.

Μεθυσκω = *stop being drunk*. They can be anywhere. Present passive imperative; the purpose of this command is not really drunkenness, but to set up a super analogy. It is setting up the physical to the spiritual. The man and the woman and scar tissue of the soul; and the blood of Christ and the physical and the spiritual.

There is a passive voice, a passive voice; a negative and a positive, and an imperative mood in both cases. There is this parallel situation. Drunkenness changes the inner life. When the Holy Spirit controls the life, there is a change on the inner life as well. Drunkenness is physical and being filled with the Spirit is spiritual.

Eph 5:18: **And do not get drunk with wine, in which is excess, but be filled with the Spirit,**

πληρωω = *to fill up*.

Doctrine of Spirituality

Spirituality is a command to all believers; passive voice means, we receive it; imperative means that this is an order.

1. The work of the Holy Spirit in phase I is different from phase II. In phase I, the Holy Spirit does 5 things for everyone.
 - a. The agent of regeneration.
 - b. He indwells the believer.
 - c. He baptizes every believer into Christ.
 - d. He seals every believer.
 - e. He gives every believer at least one spiritual gift.
 - f. This all occur simultaneously.
2. We are never commanded to be indwelt by the Spirit; we are always indwelt by the Spirit. **Walk in the Spirit, ;walk in the light**; these are synonyms.
3. We are always indwelt but we are not always filled by the Spirit. If we produce human good while not under the control of the Spirit, we are quenching the Spirit. Sin grieves the Spirit. Since human good comes from the sin nature, should it be confessed? No. Human good is held in abeyance until the last judgment. In rebound, we cite our sins which are already paid for on the cross. When the sin nature controls the life, human good will be produced. Under the control of the sin nature, we do not sin every second on the second. We sometimes produce human good. So, sin and human good are distinguished. Whether we are filled, grieving or quenching, the Holy Spirit is indwelling us to stay. The presence of the Holy Spirit in the soul keeps out demons so demon possession and Satan possession are impossible. Satan can only get into us through false doctrine in the soul.
4. Spirituality and carnality are mutually exclusive; they are absolutes in phase II. You are either filling of the Holy Spirit or controlled by the old sin nature. If you are

controlled by the sin nature, you are called carnal. You are 100% carnal or 100% spiritual. You are never a little of each. There is a relative side to Christianity, which is called spiritual growth. In any of these stages, you can be carnal or spiritual. A mature believer might rebound more quickly. Learn to distinguish between the relative concepts and the absolute concepts. The filling of the Holy Spirit is an absolute. The either/or concept. 1John 3:4–9.

5. 1John 1:6–7 spiritual believer walks in the light; and carnal believer walks in darkness. 1John 2:10–11
6. The spiritual believer accomplishes 3 general objectives:
 - a. The imitation of God. Eph. 5:1 2Cor. 3:3
 - b. He glorifies Jesus Christ John 16:14 Beware of those who try to glorify the Holy Spirit; the Spirit is not here to glorify Himself. When they go “Oh Holy Ghost” that is the time to get the hell out. The tongues movement is just as vicious and as Satanic as it can be. They do not glorify Christ.
 - c. Rom. 8:2–4 fulfillment of the Law. The Mosaic Law requires perfect righteousness. Moses is the first one to communicate it, so it is called the Mosaic Law. You cannot produce perfect righteousness. Having a sin nature means that we are going to come up short. How can you keep the Law? We are not commanded to keep the Law, but we are commanded to be filled with the Spirit. Rom. 8:2–4
7. Gal. 5:18 the believer filled with the Spirit is not under the Law Rom. 10:4 he is subject to a greater and higher law
8. Jesus Christ was always filled with the Holy Spirit. At His baptism, the Spirit came on Him like a dove, but this was by way of providing gifts. When the believer is filled with the Holy Spirit, He produces Christ in us Gal. 4:19 5:22–23 1John 2:5, 6
9. The spiritual believer magnifies Christ in his inner life. Philip. 1:20, 21
10. The results of spirituality:
 - a. Glorification of Christ John 7:39 2Cor. 3:3
 - b. Understanding Bible doctrine John 14:26 1Cor. 2:6–16
 - c. Acts 1:8 2Cor. 3–5 witnessing for Christ
 - d. Divine guidance Rom. 8:14
 - e. Assurance with regards to salvation. Rom. 8:14–16 1John 3:24
 - f. Worship Philip. 3:3
 - g. Prayer eph. 6:18 prayer is a left bank exhale toward God and it demands the filling of the Spirit.
 - h. Helping other believers to rebound. Gal. 6:1
11. Production in phase II depends upon who controls your life. Spiritual believer produces divine good and is reward; 1Cor. –3:12,14 carnal believer produces human good. 1Cor. 3:12, 15
12. Quenching the Spirit refers to the production of human good. Grieving the Spirit refers to sinning.
13. Emotion or ecstasies is not characteristic of spirituality of the Church Age. Grand emotional response is not spirituality. You can be filled with the Spirit and feel

depressed and sometimes emotional. Many believers try to work up ecstasies, thinking that this gives them the Spirit. Other try an ascetic route. 2Cor. 6:11–12 Rom. 6:17–18

14. Ecstasies will characterize spirituality in the Millennium. Christ is on the earth and Satan is incarcerated. Today, Christ is in heaven and the filling of the Holy Spirit is to glorify Christ.
15. Confidence regarding the filling of the Holy Spirit 1John 3:20, 21

Pseudo Spirituality

1. Yieldedness is not the means; it is the result. Prayer is the result of the filling of the Holy Spirit. Witnessing and worship are results, but they are not the means. Do not confuse means and results.
2. Spirituality by personality imitation. Imitating someone who seems to be outstanding to us. Dress, you imitate them. They wear cosmetics, you wear cosmetics.
3. Speech: amen, bless you brother, thou and there in prayer. The whole idea of prayer is to use your normal vocabulary. Mannerisms; posture; facial expressions looking sincere. Song leaders who ask you to smile when you sing. Some kook song leader trying to get everyone else to smile. Obviously, you don't want a morose song leader. Personality is not the same as spirituality. Some think we need a stereotype personality, but God uses all personalities.
4. Taboo = a series of forbidden activities not forbidden by the Word of God. They are usually are some form of legalism. Give up cigars, card, movies, dancing, etc. people in Christian circles worked some of this stuff out. Something is no longer an issue because of tv? Whether a person is spiritual or carnal should be none of our business. We have no right to superimpose our own standards and taboos on others. We are in the way of inhale and exhale of doctrine. Bob remembers preachers in California; Sunday night would be young people's night. No more necking. No more cards. Throw away your cigarettes; stop drinking. The old people got all excited about these things. Texas added "Don't swim where the girls are." The idea of no girls on the beach is the most distressing thing Bob has ever heard; he was a lifeguard off Catalina for many years. Parts of the country, if you walk into a church with cosmetics and you are thought to be a prostitute. Bible institutes are often this way. An unbeliever can stop this. Unbelievers can stop this. Bob's father when drinking a bottle of pinch bottle haig and haig and he would demean the movie theaters. He would not darken the door of the cinema. Everyone has a background prejudice. This will keep us from being filled with the Spirit. Now, giving these things up doesn't mean you need to go back to them. You are not spiritual for giving something up. What you do with spirituality and Bible doctrine is between you and God. Unbelievers can have taboos as well. No two believers in any local church have reached the same stage of growth. They are all gathered together. Obviously a mature believer cannot superimpose on a baby believer his own standards. An adult cannot superimpose their standards upon a baby in the crib. The doctrine of privacy protects the individual believer. Also the

filling of the Holy Spirit technique. The responsibility for all is just to rebound. Taboos dolead to spiritual bullying.

5. Spirituality by relativity. I am spiritual because my sins are more refined and nicer than your sins. His sins are more subtle; they are less obvious. I am a spiritual giant because when I compare myself to the overt sinner, I am a better person, obviously.
6. Spirituality be respectability. I have turned respectable, so I am a spiritual believer. This is based upon the idea that there are degrees of growth. Any sin puts a believer out of fellowship.
7. Spirituality by asceticism. Extreme self-denial. I fast, tarry, agonize, starve myself, edification complex. This system would make you think Gandhi is a great Christian.
8. Spirituality by ecstasies. A hair trigger on their emotions and they can be set off; I am emotional and I have ecstatic experiences
9. Spirituality by ritualism. I am spiritual because I participate in certain rituals. I observe certain holy days.
10. Spirituality by self-crucifixion; self is crucified by positional truth. "Kill him, Lord, killy him" is one phrase said.
11. Program spirituality ; I conform to the program of the church. I give, I go to prayer meetings, Age of Israel attend church, etc. the church sets up a system and you go with it.
12. A right thing done in a wrong way is wrong; that is pseudo spirituality; right things done in the energy of the flesh. The real issue is not the right thing; it is who controls your life. That is really the issue.

Lesson #24 old sin nature vs. Holy Spirit Basic Doctrine Rom. 8:1 circa 8/5/69

Time magazine article about time. Linder has written a book dealing with time. Time cannot be saved up or put off. For affluent and leisured society, there is too much to do. Pleasure-blindness. He holds that the commodity of time makes people the slaves of possessions which they have. One can own more things, but one cannot do more things.

Eph. 5 emphasizes being filled with the Spirit. Rom. 8 deals with the old sin nature and the Holy Spirit. The extra line in v. 1 does not belong; it is an error in ditography where this phrase was taken from v. 4.

Κατακρίνα = *to judge*.

Doctrine of the Last Judgement

1. Human race is divided by John 3:36, which is attitude toward Jesus Christ. You have either believed in Jesus Christ or you have not.
2. The unbeliever is under condmenation because of his unbelief. John 3:18
3. Unbeliever has two appointments: death and the last judgement. Heb. 9:27–28

4. In order to reach the last judgment, the unbeliever has the 2nd resurrection. He is resurrected for the last judgment. Rev. 20:11–12
5. The unbeliever at the last judgment has an indictment, which is human good. Rev. 20:13–14. The sum of his good deeds is not enough to qualify him for heaven. Human good is incompatible with the plan of God. Human good is always trying to infiltrate the plan of God. We accept human good as a substitute for divine dynamics.
6. Rev. 20:14 describes the future of every unbeliever. He is alive and conscious in this Lake of Fire. There is a maximum pain through fire which he will suffer forever.
7. The unbeliever's condemnation in Rev. 20:15

Rom 8:1: **There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus.**

Dative of advantage. God takes 34 things and these are with us at all times. When we are out of line, when we are way way way out of line. There will never be a time when we do not have these 34 things. We cannot do anything to get rid of these things. Since God is perfect, He cannot come up with an imperfect plan. If there is something which man can do, then there is some merit; however, there is nothing meritorious that man can do to impress God.

The final phrase is *in Christ Jesus*. This is our permanent local.

Doctrine of Positional Truth

1. Mechanics: the baptism of the Spirit 1Cor. 12:13 one of the things with the Holy Spirit does is put us into Christ.
2. 1Cor. 1:2, 30 the carnal Corinthians are called sanctified in Christ Jesus.
3. Positional truth eliminates any permanent judgment.
4. This also qualifies the believer for living with God forever. To live with God, we need to deal with sins, no eternal life, and no righteousness. God had to find a way to give us His life and to give us His righteousness. 1John 5:11–12 He is perfect righteousness and eternal life. When we enter into union with Christ, we share His life and His righteousness and we receive these things immediately at salvation.
5. Everything necessary to live with God forever is provided for us as salvation. We are on some kind of parade bandwagon, so we have to find some kind of drama in our salvation experience. No matter how and what kind of drama surrounds your life, it is the decision which makes the difference. Some dishonest organizations find those who have already been believers. They might get carried through high school, but in college, they fall apart, going crazy. They come into contact with some organization and they rededicate or they say, "I did not change my wicked ways or I did not ask Jesus into my heart; or I had a head belief and not a heart belief." Whatever it is, they were saved whenever they first believed in Jesus Christ. God does something the moment a person first believes. No matter how young or old or in between, you are saved. Faith saves, not anything else. There may be 50 ways to go through the door, but everyone who is saved goes through that door.

Old Testament saints have their position in truth with regards to the covenants of God.

6. Eph. 1:4–5 God the Father gives the Son a destiny, and God the Father elects Him to this destiny. We share our Lord's destiny, and we share His election.
7. We are new creatures because we are in Christ and not because of a change of behavior patterns.
8. Rom. 8:38–39 eternal security of the believer.
9. Current and retroactive positional truth. We must reject human good; there is no place in the plan of God for human good. We are in union with Him and accepted in the beloved.
10. Implications of current positional truth: we share His life, which is eternal life. We share His election, His righteousness and His destiny and His sonship. Heirship as well. Sanctification, priesthood (Heb. 10:10–14) and the kingdom of Christ.

God has designed our spiritual life and our sin nature challenges the Holy Spirit. There is this conflicting set of laws operating within the believer. This refers to the law of the Spirit of life.

Rom 8:2: **For the law of the Spirit of life has set you free in Christ Jesus from the law of sin and death.**

These two sets of laws set up an inner conflict. People can be awfully nice until they are saved; but sometimes, people undergo changes for the worst when they are saved. Before believing in Jesus Christ, there was no contest. The sin nature ruled the roost. It could crank out sin and human good and the restraint upon sin came from fear of repercussions. Fear often acts as a restrainer of sin. There are a lot of things that we would do if we could get away with it. We have thought about a lot of things, but we figured out the percentages and decided not to do it.

Some may understand eternal security and they decide to live it up. Doctrine must replace human restraints. There is a period of time wherein which they need to get some doctrine. They may go through a period of sewing their wild oats. They understand a little about eternal security. The laws of life catch up to them and misery in the soul triggers guilt in their soul, until they have a complex of guilt and they have a reaction to this wild oat period. Some become antinomian. Anti-law. Christians operating without the law. Some are always puzzled, disillusioned and disturbed, so they explain things in other ways. A head belief and not a heart belief.

Conflict of two laws: law of the sin nature and the law of the Spirit of Life. Some get out of line and become worse people than they were before. There is a law, even when we do not think we are under a law. Νόμος is a set of principles combined to form a norm and standard. The Spirit of life refers to life as a function. The Holy Spirit indwells us in order to control us, so that we can function under the plan of God. This life is in Christ Jesus.

Ελυθερω = *to make free, to see free; freedom to function under a plan.* This is based upon your own volition and not upon someone else's.

ἐλυθερω

1. this means that we are a priest.
2. As a priest, we have privacy and freedom, which gives us privacy.
3. We have provision; God demands the perfect and He provides for it.

The Christian way of life is a supernatural way of life. God has provided a way for us to serve Him and to function within His plan. Rebound gives us a license to serve God. We may think it is a license to sin, but we are looking at this at the wrong direction. Christ cannot sponsor sin. If you say rebound gives you a license to sin, then you are confused and possibly a cluck; a license to build and a license to breath.

The sin nature wears the crown until the day we accept Christ as Savior. It runs us until we believe in Jesus Christ. The cross removes the crown. The provision of the cross is the Holy Spirit. We have a basis for victory over the sin nature, which is why απο is used.

Death is θανατος we just saw it in Eph. 5:14 Rev. 3:1 two laws are now set up in the life of every believer. This is like having the law of gravity, which keeps us in our seat; the law of aerodynamics over powers the law of gravity. That is like the Holy Spirit versus the old sin nature. There are two laws fighting inside of us.

The law is the first husband and when you believe in Jesus Christ, you have divorced this husband and your new husband is Christ. The first husband is still hanging around. He became a habit, which is the story of the sin nature. Our sin nature was a habit and sometimes a very dear friend. Now that we are born again and have these new things in Christ, it is often easy in disillusionment. A lot of women will live with a man for years out of habit. They don't love him; they don't know what love is. The point is, it is possible—high school kids going steady mistake habits for love and having good times together as being love; this habit goes on for several years and they graduate from high school and get married. The habit is there; it is like eating something bad for breakfast. They think this connection is love. With the sin nature, we have this habit. When things go wrong, we go back to these habits. For this reason, because the sin nature is there and because of the inner struggle, God has provided in grace the means to offset.

The 3rd law, which is the Mosaic Law. This law is bonafide and it has a function. The Mosaic Law for us can tell us, you know that first husband? He's no good for you. For divine establishment, the Mosaic Law is more helpful.

Rom 8:3: **For God has done what the law, weakened by the flesh, could not do. By sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and for sin, he condemned sin in the flesh,**

v. 3 tells us what the Law could not do. We expect a verb and find a noun, which should stand out. The Law unable... Imperfect active indicative of αεσθενω, which means *to be*

sick, to be weak. The Law was never designed to produced spirituality. The Mosaic Law cannot do for us what the Holy Spirit can do for us. The Mosaic Law cannot be the Christian way of life; it simply is not. The Law simply cannot help us here. What weakens the law? It is weak because of the flesh. Δια + the genitive of σαρκος. The Law is outside; the sin nature is inside. The Law sets up standards so we know that we don't measure up. The Law shows that we have a problem, but the Law cannot do anything about the problem.

Mosaic Law

1. The Mosaic Law is divided into 3 parts:
 - a. Codex I: the moral code; the commandments. This includes the 10 Commandments. This tells us that we are bankrupt before God. Commandments
 - b. Codex II: spiritual code; a complete Christology; the means of teaching Christology and soteriology to the ;Old Testament saints. The written Word of God and the spoken Word of God. Ordinances
 - c. Codex III: judgments, also known as a social code, and this was designed for saved and unsaved Jews and it included taxes, military, marriage, and almost anything you could think of. Laws of hygiene, dietary laws; and it portect the 4 divine institutions.
2. Mosaic Law given only to Israel and not to the church. Rom. 9:4 Deut. 4:8 Rom. 2:12–14 Acts 15:5 Gal. 2:19 not given to the church, gentiles or anyone else.
3. Christ fulfilled the Law. Christ lived a perfect life, and he was the embodiment of the law of God. His work on the cross and who and what He was. Obedience to the law of the land is how he fulfilled codex III.
4. Christ is the end of the law for believers. Rom. 10:4
5. Believer in the Church Age is under a higher law. Rom. 8:2–4
6. Limitations of the Mosaic Law:
 - a. It cannot justify Rom. 3:9
 - b. Cannot give life
 - c. Cannot provide Holy Spirit Gal 3:2
 - d. It cannot produce miracles Gal. 3:5
 - e. Law cannot solve the problems of the indwelling sin nature. Rom. 8:3

You cannot keep the law be keeping the law, only by the Holy Spirit.

Lesson #25

Spirituality Basic Bible Doctrine Eph. 5:7

circa 8/12/69

This is one of the most difficult passages in the Word of God to understand.

Law of sin and death is the function of the old sin nature. The Law of Spirit and life is the function of the Holy Spirit.

Ασθενεω is usually used for some area of health. However, this is a different kind of weakness. We were not designed to hoist 1000 lbs over your head or to run 100 yards in 5 seconds. It doesn't mean there is anything wrong with you; you just were not designed to do this. Πεμπω = *to send*. No one was filling of the Holy Spirit in the Old Testament.

Christ has a human soul minus the sin nature. Aorist active indicative of κατακρινω = *to judge according to a perfect norms and standards; to condemn*. He condemned sin in the flesh. The sins were poured out upon Him and then God the Father condemned them. This is not that God had a lacsidasical attitude toward sin; He just did not judge it immediately. This may be why Satan was allowed to appeal. All 3 laws are brought together in one passage.

Rom 8:3: **For God has done what the law, weakened by the flesh, could not do. By sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and for sin, he condemned sin in the flesh,**

all 3 laws are gathered together in v. 4. Πληρωω = *to fill up a deficiency, to fully possess, to fully influence, to fill up with a certain quality*. Aorist massive subjunctive? Volition with regards to rebound.

If you go positive toward rebound, then you will will operate under the law of Spirit and life; if you do not, you will stay out of fellowship. Probably 80% of believers today are living apart from the Spirit, imitating unbelievers.

There is this tripe where they say, "There are certain sins you will not commit as a Christian." The principle is there. It is possible to do almost anything in the world. And if you are a Christian, then you stay a Christian. There are a maximum # of shockable believers.

Bob is going to start out with easy passages so that 90% of you follow him; and as he moves into this more and more, it will become more difficult.

A believer who is out of fellowship imitates the unbeliever. Once you have accepted Christ, you can spend your whole life imitating the unbeliever. The unbeliever builds up scar tissue and when you take the believer and you know he has an old sin nature. He has the same scar tissue and the same life as he would as an unbeliever.

There is πρασσω and ποιεω. The unbeliever does have some restraints, like fear. However when we commit a sin, we do it, but we don't practice it. Bob can tell it will be a rough night tonight.

Rom 8:4: **in order that the righteous requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not according to the [standard of the] flesh but according to the [standard of the] Spirit.**

You cannot keep the Law by keeping the Law; you can keep the Law by being filled with the Spirit. The believer who does not use rebound cannot make one positive move in their lives.

The only people who really speak in tongues today, are those who are speaking with the ἐνῶπιος demon. A believer doing this is suffering from self-delusion. “Oh, he can even tell you what he said; and others can tell you too; they are crazy together.” A believer imitates another believer. When a believer does this, he is simply imitating the unbeliever.

3 passages to take up our subject: the believer imitating the unbeliever. Every time Bob turns around, someone is sitting in the dark back there. Bob has learned some things sitting in the dark, but they had nothing to do with the spiritual life. Bob knew it would be a bad night.

1Cor. 3:1–3: **But I, brothers, could not address you as spiritual people, but as people of the flesh, as infants in Christ.**

“I could not speak to you as spiritual but as carnal.” Carnal believer is out in the tullies. Corinthians are apparently all out in the tullies. No matter how good a speaker is, if the believers there are out of fellowship, then nothing is going to be got. It all depends upon the filling of the Spirit.

1Co 3:2: **I fed you with milk, not solid food, for you were not ready for it. And even now you are not yet ready,**

v. 3 we find out why they cannot take in good teaching:

1Co 3:3: **for you are still of the flesh. For while there is jealousy and strife among you, are you not of the flesh and behaving only in a human way?**

They are building up scar tissue on the left and right banks of the soul. The sin nature controls the life without a break. It is persistent carnality. They are imitating some kind of unbeliever. Moral, immoral, religious, irreligious, etc.

Certain kind of fighters are great punchers. To get set means, a slugger has to have his left foot in a certain position. His right foot must be firmly planted to spin. And Bob describes his hook. This is called getting set. You watch the feet of a boxer, and if you see his feet lining up in this way, you move in close and jab or you tie him up. This describes those who live their entire lives in carnality. There is no way you can tell that they are saved. They might not be the town drunk; they might be the most religious person in town.

Notice what Paul points out: there is envy, strife and divisions, the actual factions within a church. **Are you not carnal and walking like men?**

Gal 5:15: But if you bite and devour one another, watch out that you are not consumed by one another.

Gal 5:16: But I say, walk by the Spirit, and you will not gratify the desires of the flesh.

We have περιπατεω + κατα. The sin nature lusts against the Spirit. They are both in opposition to one another.

Gal 5:17: For the desires of the flesh are against the Spirit, and the desires of the Spirit are against the flesh, for these are opposed to each other, to keep you from doing the things you want to do.

Gal 5:18 But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law.

Gal 5:19–21: Now the works of the flesh are evident: sexual immorality, impurity, sensuality, idolatry, sorcery, enmity, strife, jealousy, fits of anger, rivalries, dissensions, divisions, envy, drunkenness, orgies, and things like these. I warn you, as I warned you before, that those who do such things will not inherit the kingdom of God.

Different groups of sins; overt sins and social sins are listed here; and *sins like these* indicate that this is simply a representative list. I've told you these things before and I will tell you again. The present tense means that Paul has said this several times in the past.

Then we have πρασσω = *to practice*. This is used of the unbeliever sinning, as there are no restraints upon the unbeliever. The unbeliever is not going to heaven, so he πρασσω's in this field. But the believer does not πρασσω but they ποιω.

When you are out of fellowship consistently, then you are like an unbeliever. You behave no differently. The issue is, *who controls your life?* Extended periods of time outside of fellowship means you act like an unbeliever.

The Greek of 1John is quite simple, but the information is very difficult.

1John 3:4 it is not that these people are not saved; they are not living under the control of the Spirit. Some of these show no family resemblance.

1Jo 3:4: Everyone who makes a practice of sinning also practices lawlessness; sin is lawlessness.

1Jo 3:5 You know that he appeared to take away sins, and in him there is no sin.

1Jo 3:6 No one who abides in him keeps on sinning; no one who keeps on sinning has either seen him or known him.

1Jo 3:7 Little children, let no one deceive you. Whoever practices righteousness is righteous, as he is righteous.

1Jo 3:8 Whoever makes a practice of sinning is of the devil, for the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the works of the devil.

1Jo 3:9 **No one born of God makes a practice of sinning, for God's seed abides in him, and he cannot keep on sinning because he has been born of God.**

Have you sinned since you were saved? It says here, "You cannot sin." This is also quite accurate, because a 1st year Greek student could translate this. So it is not a problem with being mistranslated.

1Jo 3:10 **By this it is evident who are the children of God, and who are the children of the devil: whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is the one who does not love his brother.**

There is obviously a great deal of spade work to be done here. The subject is not salvation but manifestation of the family tree. If you are born into the family of God, then you ought to reflect some family attributes.

The word which occurs the most in this passage is *whosoever*. Vv. 4, 6, 9, 10. Who are these *whosoever's* in this passage? There is the unbeliever in this passage; then the believer is divided by an absolute; he is spiritual or he is carnal. The first thing we need to do is to identify who is who.

Summarize the *whosoever*; in v. 4, it is a reference to the carnal believer. The unbeliever from Gal. 5:21 *πρασσω's* the sin. V. 6a is the spiritual believer, because *he abides in Him*. Carnal believer will be associated with *ποιεω*. Spiritual believer is associated with *μενω*. *Αμαρτανω* is another verb used.

The carnal believer will be taken first. *Ποιεω* is the carnal believer verb. The spiritual believer in v. 6a is the *whosoever*, which is associated with *μενω*. The vocabulary of John used the verb *αμαρτινω*. The last one in v. 10 is an unbeliever again.

Spirituality is an absolute. A believer is not partially spiritual and partially carnal. We all start out as babies and we move to adolescence. A baby can be carnal or spiritual. Adolescence it balances out. The mature believer spends more time as spiritual. Now, they can all be both carnal and spiritual. You cannot be half carnal and half spiritual.

Now there are passages not found in the original; but this is a part of the Word of God.

When the believer gets out of fellowship, he is not keeping the law.

1Jo 3:4: **Everyone who makes a practice of sinning also practices lawlessness; sin is lawlessness** [Thieme says, *and the lawlessness is the sin*].

1. Lawlessness means out from the filling of the Spirit.
2. The believer out of the bottom circle has removed himself from the law of the Spirit.
3. This passage deals with the spirituality of Rom. 8:2.
4. Sin was in the world before the Mosaic Law.

And the sin is the lawlessness. So now he turns it around?

1. The believer under the control of the old sin nature does lawlessness. He is walking in darkness.
2. The carnal believer walking in darkness imitates the unbeliever walking in darkness.
3. The fact that the believer sins after salvation is obvious in 1John 1:5–10
4. The believer who denies the old sin nature or the existence of personal sin is condemned as ignorant and blasphemous in that passage.
5. In the Christian way of life, spirituality and carnality are mutually exclusive, just as darkness and light are mutually exclusive.
6. Any sin is out from control of the Holy Spirit. This is lawlessness and excludes the filling of the Spirit.

Next 3 words: **and you know...** Carnality was defeated by the cross. *Alpw* = *to lift up and carry*. The sins were not simply taken away, but Christ bore them. Subjunctive mood; He did not have to, but He chose to.

1Jo 3:5 **You know that he appeared to take away sins, and in him there is no sin.**

Our Lord could not have sin in His deity or in his humanity. Our sins were picked up and put on Him.

1Jo 3:6 **No one who abides in him keeps on sinning; no one who keeps on sinning has either seen him or known him.**

These are absolute statuses, so they must be treated as such—spirituality is walking in the light and carnality is walking in darkness. These are mutually exclusive. Spirituality and carnality are mutually exclusive, so they are stated in v. 6 as absolutes.

Μενω = *to abide, to remain*. This has to do with the believer. An aoristic present; punctiliar action in present time. Aorist is primary for actions from the past. When you are filled with the Spirit, you are not sinning. At the point that you are filled with the Spirit, you are not sinning. Present active participle, modifying *sins not*. John uses *abide* like Paul uses *filled*.

You cannot sin at the same time as being filled with the Spirit. How can you get unfilled? You sin. Since it is clear that God cannot solicit to temptation or evil. There are 3 sources of temptation: the world, the flesh and the devil (or his demon corps). It is not sinful to be tempted. As long as you maintain the filling of the Holy Spirit, then you are not sinning. When you are not sinning, you are not sinning.

Let's assume that you are not sinning at this moment. You might even know that you are not sinning. You may have some unknown sin. Suppose you are committing a sin right now but you don't know that it is a sin. What you are actually saying, "I don't know for certain, but I don't think I am sinning." If you are filled with the Spirit, you know you are not

sinning. That is what this passage is saying. This passage is stated in principle; however, some can only think in terms of applying the passage to yourself.

To be tempted is not wrong, but when you say, "Oh boy, here we go" then you are committing the sin. In effect, you stiff arm the Holy Spirit. By your own negative volition, you have succumbed. There are sources of temptation, but there is only one source of sin. You break out of carnality by confession of sin. When you go negative, you do sin.

Sinneth not is punctiliar, meaning that you cannot sin while filled with the Spirit. You cannot do both at the same time. When you choose to sin, you have had it. This is a principle and not an application. You are either filled with the Spirit or you are under the control of the sin nature. These are exclusive concepts.

An unbeliever is controlled by his sin nature; and there is no way he can stop sinning except by restrictions on the human race.

1Jo 3:7 **Little children, let no one deceive you. Whoever practices righteousness is righteous, as he is righteous.**

Lesson #26 Spirituality Basic Bible Doctrine Eph. 5:7 circa 8/19/69

to abide is the verb μένω; this is the principle of being controlled by the Holy Spirit. John uses the verbiage *walk in the light* and *abide*. We cannot sin when filled with the Spirit. Now, in this walk, when we succumb to temptation, and to come under the control of the sin nature, we are no longer controlled by the Holy Spirit. The world, the flesh and the devil all tempt us, but it is the sin nature and our volition which give in to sin. When filled with the Spirit you do not sin; and when under the control of the Holy Spirit, you cannot sin.

The Holy Spirit no longer controls you when you sin sins of ignorance and sins of cognizance. You are carnal or spiritual, but you are not both. You do sin as a believer, but under the control of the sin nature.

The unbeliever is described so that we can understand the believer. They are both under the control of the sin nature when sinning. In this way, we are no different from the unbeliever. When God the Holy Spirit. We get out of the bottom circle with negative volition at the point of temptation. Within an instant, we commit a sin and are under the control of the sin nature. The unbeliever always is controlled by the sin nature. He produced human good and sins. When the believer is out of fellowship, he produces sin and human good. Therefore, when a believer is out of fellowship, you cannot distinguish between them. This does not mean that, once you believe in Jesus Christ that you will never sin again. The idea that someone has not sinned for 10 years, is ridiculous.

1Jo 3:6 **No one who abides in him keeps on sinning; no one who keeps on sinning has either seen him or known him.**

Οραω = *to see, to take in a panoramic view*. Sometimes this word is used for an ignorant believer and for unbelievers. We have the verb γινωσκω which means they have never known Jesus Christ from experience. The natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit from Corinthians is a parallel passage.

V. 7: spirituality produces divine good. Πλαναω = *to be taken in mentally, to be out-thought, to be deceived*. This is addressed to believers (little children). He practicing righteousness si righteous as He is righteous.

Ποιεω = *to do*. For the unbeliever, we have the word πρρασσω. Now we have ποιεω being used for doing something good. The first work for righteousness here is δικαιοσυνη. This means grace orientation. For a person who is grace orientation, he is soul breathing, inhale of doctrine into the left bank, he has built up grace orientation, inner happiness, a relaxed mental attitude, capacity for love; mastery of the details of life. What do you produce with an edification complex? You will produce δικαιος because you are δικαιοσυνη. The one who is grace oriented is righteous. He has been habitually filled with the Spirit. Edification complex is grace orientation, and when that functions, we produce divine good, coming out of the right bank. The carnal believer cannot produce divine good. Jesus Christ produced divine good on earth, and we produce the same divine good under the conditions of the filling of the Spirit.

If you are giving a glass of water yourself, it is not divine good; if you give someone a glass of water, that is a grace function.

1Jo 3:7 **Little children, let no one deceive you. Whoever practices righteousness is righteous, as He is righteous.**

There is a reference to two kinds of people who sin: unbelievers who sin and carnal believers who sin. Φανερωω = *to manifest*. Our Lord was manifested so that He might destroy or nullify the works of the devil. Salvation is potential. God the Son provided an alternative to functioning under something other than you sin. Such a person has the option of functioning from the Holy Spirit.

1Jo 3:8 **Whoever makes a practice of sinning is of the devil, for the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the works of the devil.**

Γιναω = *to be born*. Perfect passive. Someone born out from God does not do sin (an aoristic present; during the time you are filled with the Spirit, you do not do sin. He cannot sin when controlled by the Holy Spirit. All sin is committed outside of the Spirit.

Seed Used 3 Ways

1. Jesus Christ as the Seed of the woman. Gal. 3:16 Gen. 3
2. Doctrine in Luke 8:11 or to the Word of God.
3. The Holy Spirit is called the seed here. God's seed = the Holy Spirit.

His seed remains in us. We remain in Him and God's seed remains in us. 1Cor. 13:7 filling of the Holy Spirit is hupomeno. God the Holy Spirit is controlling. Because the Holy Spirit controls, he cannot sin. He has been born in the past with the result that he is a child of God.

Summary of Passage

1. He cannot is the present active indicative of δυναμαι. If you sin in ignorance, it is still incompatible with the Holy Spirit. The discipline may be different, but the concept is the same. When you are out of fellowship, you will commit other sins pretty quickly. The whole point of this passage, when you are controlled by the Spirit, you cannot sin; when you are not, then you sin. There is an act of volition involved in sin. You must do something to get out of fellowship. You do something nonmeritorious to get back in.
2. The subject here is the spiritual believer.
3. When the Spirit controls the life, the believer cannot sin.
4. The Holy Spirit is God and cannot sin.
5. Only ignorance of sin or negative volition at the point of temptation can break the control of the Holy Spirit.

Present linear action sarte he is unable to sin. Hamartano means someone is unable to sin. He has been born out from the source of God.

15 Summary Points

1. God is unable to do anything to promote or condone sin.
2. God has provided a means of victory over the old sin nature.
3. What the sin nature promotes always leads to sin.
4. God is not the author of sin. God does not solicit to sin.
5. It is incompatible with the divine nature to originate, to condone or to sponsor sin. This is why we are born of God and God must provide a means to overcome this.
6. Grace found a way to overcome the bondage to the sin nature. It is summarized by the phrase *cannot sin*.
7. Every creature must live according to his nature.
8. To be born of God means to live in union with Christ under the indwelling of the Spirit in a permanent relationship with the Father.
9. By the filling of the Spirit, the believer takes on the family resemblance. Only when he is filled with the Spirit. A fish has the nature of a fish and lives in the water; a bird has the nature of the bird and lives in the air. We are a fish-bird; part of the time in the air and part of the time in the water. We resemble our new family when we are controlled by the Spirit and when we out not filled, we show our other nature.
10. Believer under the control of the sin nature exhibits human characteristics.

11. Believer has the nature of God and God has provided the basis to take on the family characteristics.
12. The believer can exhibit spirituality or carnality.
13. In regeneration, we carry the life of God which cannot sin.
14. The believer possesses the ability not to sin; by his volition he can choose to move under the control of the sin nature and imitate the unbeliever.
15. In principle, the believer is under the Spirit and produces divine good; and under the sin nature, produces sin and human good. This is a passage of principle.

1Jo 3:9 **No one born of God makes a practice of sinning, for God's seed abides in him, and he cannot keep on sinning because he has been born of God.**

Now to 1Cor. 13, we get our last word on spirituality. As soon as someone found out that *charity* means *love*, they have gone out into the tules on this.

The Doctrine of Love

Once we cover this, you will understand love; you may not understand women, but you will understand love.

1. At the point of salvation, every believer passes the point of propitiation and comes under maximum divine love. God has characteristics which are not compatible with man. God is righteousness and justice. God did not judge sin until Christ went to the cross. All the sins in the world were poured out on Jesus Christ and judged. Because of this, it is possible for God to love the world. There is an appointment. We pass the point of propitiation. God is free to love us, whether we are the worst believer who has ever lived or the best. At the point of salvation, every believer passes the point of propitiation. God's love is not based upon our modus operandi, whether good or bad. We can become a monster after being saved. God still loves us, good or bad. This is positional truth. We are loved by the same love which God has for His Son. God the Father loves God the Son with perfect love. We did not earn it or deserve it.
2. True love is understood at the cross. This is love that we have earned or deserved. This is God finding a way to love us and still be consistent with His own character. How can God love us and not be slumming? God found a way to be consistent with His own perfect character. How much of this did God deserve? None of it. We can never deserve any of it. We can never make it up to God. Our ability to appreciate God's love and to understand is Bible doctrine. But, there is no making it up to God.
3. God can love every believer with a maximum amount of love regardless of our status, whether spiritual or carnal, baby or mature. There are 4 areas of application.
 - a. Positional truth. God the Father has a love for God the Son; a perfect love for Him.

- b. The application of propitiation: when you accept Christ, you have passed the point of propitiation.
- c. The concept of God's love, which is grace love. It is maximum love and grace love. It depends upon the character of the one who initiates the love.
- d. The application of the divine essence. Righteousness does not destroy God's love, it strengthens it. God can discipline us because we are in His family; but He will not judge us. His love for us will last forever. God has the ability to love us (omnipotence). He is omniscient and He still loves us. Imagine knowing all about us and still loving us. If this woman loves us, you cannot imagine what she is thinking. If you knew what they were thinking. But God knows everything that we are thinking and not once has He missed a beat in loving us. As believers, there are times when our best foot is not forward, and God still loves us. God is immutable; he cannot change. He is veracity. His love is identified with truth. That is a love you cannot beat.
4. There are 3 basic categories of love. When a believers in inhaling Bible doctrine and building an edification complex in his soul (with the filling of the Holy Spirit). 3 basic categories of love exist: love toward God, love opposite sex, love toward friends.
5. Apart from the above, there is another kind of love, which has nothing to do with soul breathing. It is based upon relationship. Στοργεω and στογη and we do have the noun αστοργος which means *without natural affection*. There is a natural relationship love. A love which exists within the framework of a relationship. This could extend to esprit decor in a military organization.
6. There is a love which involves the details of life. Αρχεω = *to be content*. Heb. 13:5 there is an attitude toward the details of life. This is the penthouse of the edification complex.
7. The Koine Greek presents two basic words for love: αγαπαω (αγαπη) and φιλεω (φιλος). These can be distinguished. Two categories of love which emanate from the soul. Αγαπη is related to the mentality of the soul. Φιλεω is a total soul love, coming from all parts of the soul.
8. The source of αγαπη love; two sources. One is in our passage, which is the filling of the Holy Spirit. It produces agape love as per the fruit of the Spirit. The 2nd source is the erected edification complex of the soul.
9. The source of φιλος is an inhale of Bible doctrine into the soul. John 21:15–17
10. Let us distinguish between αγαπη and φιλος. These people who did not learn this in seminary can take their books and education and.... Go back to Archbishop Trench took the Latin and Greek words. This language coexisted in the Roman empire. We know the Latin difference, which is the same as the Greek difference. That αγαπη is divine love and the filios is human love is simple and wrong. Sometimes these over-simplifications can be way out. αγαπη is specialized; and φιλεω is general. In the soul, αγαπη occurs in the mentality of the soul. Φιλεω is a total soul concept. Originally suggested that φιλεω is a stronger word, as Trench states. The production of these two types of love comes into the picture. αγαπη comes immediately from the filling of the Holy Spirit. However, φιλεω comes from

an edification complex. Φίλος is the rapport love which comes from knowing all about a person.

300 years ago, *I cherish there* means that you are serious with a woman; and *cherish* is a stronger word than *love*. Charity is a word which once was closely related to *cherish*, but it no longer carries its original strength. In the KJV, *charity* is a good translation.

1Cor. 12:31 **But earnestly desire [or, desire insatiably] the higher gifts. And I will show you a still more excellent way.**

Χαρισμα = *spiritual gifts*. The least of all spiritual gifts is tongues, which continued from 30 to 70 A.D. You should have an insatiable desire to have the higher gift, which is teaching as opposed to tongues, the lowest gift.

When you have a group of people, there should be one person communicating Bible doctrine, that is the ideal situation. When we are outside of the church, there is a better way to live. This tells us that the way to really live is to desire the best gifts. When you leave the church, you will be in a lot of places. You will be doing a lot of things. You can be doing all of these other things and be bored to death. When you get away from church, there is a better way to live. When you are in church, you should listen and concentrate. This passage suggests a counterpart when you leave church. Δεικνυμη is to teach by comparison, by application. Καταυπερβολη, which means *to hit a ball over a fence; beyond all quality, beyond all excellence, the highest possible way* this is way to walk out of a church and to be happy.

Lesson #27 Bible Exegsis Basic Bible Doctrine Eph. 5:7 circa 8/26/69

We have to stop at this point and determine, why do we teach the Bible the way that we do? Why do we deal with exegesis and categories? There are some who are some male types with the gift of pastor-teacher in the congregation, so they need to pay attention.

There are those who are experts in the field of pastor-teachers.

Exegetical/Categorical approach. We have not turned to a passage yet.

A Few Principles

1. Greek is the original language of the New Testament, but there are 5 classifications of the Greek language. Our of these 5 branches, only one pertains to the Greek testament.
 - a. Homeric Greek, and Homer lived about 1400 B.C., but his works are known about the 9th century B.C. Thieme did not get this until the 3rd year and it was easy. Heroes are all good, villains are all rats.
 - b. Classical Greek: Esculis, Plato, Aristotle, Heroditus. Around the 5th century B.C. Ionic is the greatest type of Classical Greek. In Athens it is

called Attic Greek. Then there is Doric Greek, which is spoken by the Spartans, who fought but they did very little writing. It is hard to be pronounced because it is like a D.I. Attic Greek is primarily the type used by us.

- c. Koine Greek is the common Greek, the language of the street, which is what we use, and began around 330 B.C.–330 A.D. and it is this language which is the most exact, the most accurate, the most lucid, the most perspicuous language for communication in the field of philology. It is not accident that it is the language of the New Testament. It begins with the genius Alexander the Great and peaks under Paul. Alexander was about to attack the Persian empire, he gave the command, and the Macedonians moved out; then he was told to give a command without Aolic Greek and Attic Greek and Spartan Greek. There were Spartans in every army. So that required Doric Greek. A few from his wife's kingdom, Epirus. Alexander realized that he could not keep on speaking 5 different languages. These are all different. So Alexander actually invented a language, which was the Koine Greek.
 - d. Patristic Greek, which was simple, but then it began to get fancy. Went to 1453 A.D. the fall of Constantinople.
 - e. Modern Greek from this time 1453 B.C. up until now.
2. Koine Greek became an international language in the Roman empire. The Romans conquered the Greeks, but the Greeks Hellenized the Romans. Romans all learned Latin and the Koine Greek. West of the Adriatic was Latin and everything east was Greek. Koine Greek was the only international language. Josephus and others wrote in Koine Greek.
- a. We learn much from the papyri; business contracts, and everything. We know all about the etymology of the language. We are in a position to uncover Bible doctrine which has been hidden for 2000 years.
 - b. Ostraka, which are pieces of broken pottery. Lots of this, and a fantastic source of information.
 - c. The structure of the Koine Greek. Bob has chosen a verb to show how scientific a language can be. Our language is anything but scientific. No suffixes with verbs. Our spelling is out of this world atrocious and inconsistent. It is good for a spelling bee.
 - d. Every Greek verb has a tense, a voice and a mood.
 - i. Tense is the kind of action, element of action. 3 kinds of tenses. Continuous tense (imperfect and present) or linear action tense; and completed action tense (perfect) and occurring action, which is the aorist. The future tense they have is like our future. No past, present and future. Sanscrit is easier in college than English. Bob's profession showed him that Sanscrit was more scientific than English.
 - ii. Voice expresses a relationship of the verb to the subject. There is always a relation between the two. Active voice: the subject produces the action of the verb. Passive voice: the subject receives the action

of the verb; the middle voice is when the subject acts upon itself or is benefitted by the action of the verb.

- iii. Mood relates the verb to reality. Indicative mood is the mood of reality; the subjunctive mood is a potential situation; imperative mood is a command; and the optative mood expresses a wish or desire.
 - iv. The Greek is scientific and the New Testament Greek only means one thing. God the Holy Spirit does not have a double mind and He isn't unstable. And this means that the information presented is dogmatic. Take heb. 6; falling away—you have this choice or that choice; Bob chooses to get out of there.
3. Words are only understood with the relationship to other words. Like the 4 conditional clauses: assumed to be true, assumed to be false; could be either; and 4th is, I wish it were true but it is not. Protasis and apodosis. We cannot distinguish ourselves; but the Greeks could. Ει + indicative mood is a 1st class condition. Protasis of a 2nd class condition ει aorist, pluperfect or some other tense. "How does he know that? I don't know it." 3rd class condition is εαον to begin with a subjunctive mood. 4th class condition begins with ει and the optative mood. You can only properly interpret the n properly if you know the greek. We used to be doers at one time, because with a language like that, who can think?
4. Etymology: is the science of determining the meaning of words in another language. The papyri has helped us greatly. 110 years ago we did not know what πληρω means. Every time the it was found, it is translated *fulfilled*. But we know now exactly what it means (1) to fill up a deficiency; (2) to fully possess; (3) to fully influence; (4) to fill up with a certain quality. Eph. 5:18: Do not be drunk with wine wherein is excess, but be filled with the Spirit. Present passive imperative. The filling of the Spirit means to fill up a deficiency. God the Holy Spirit must fully possess. To fully influence when filled with the Spirit. We are filled with the highest concept of quality and they all add to this concept. Present passive imperative. Eph. 3:19: to know the love of Christ, which surpasses knowledge. You can understand a lot of things, but this does not mean that you can understand the love of Christ. Col. 4:17 where pleroo is found again. And say to Archippus, who is a pastor, **Take heed that you fulfill it.** He must fully possess his responsibility. To fill up with quality, which is communication of doctrine. John 17:13: **But now I am coming to you, and these things I speak in the world, that they may have my joy fulfilled in themselves.** We can illustrate with this one verse. Our Lord is about to die, be resurrected and ascend. Pros + accusative. **And now I come face to face with you and these things I speak** [communication of doctrine] **in the world that you might have** [present active subjunctive of *to have and hold*] **My inner happiness fulfilled** [perfect passive participle of πληρω] **in themselves.** You can have an inner happiness, even in church. It's not impossible. How does inner happiness fully possess you? And edification complex. Noting like happiness on the inside to influence you, which is quality. God passed a law: every believer should be happy. God will not destroy our volition, so that we can choose this. Remove the volition and there is nothing left; life a wife who cannot choose to live you. Best you can have is a slot machine.

5. What is left out? Exegesis is what we have done. But we have not categorized anything. The trouble is, there is something unsatisfactory with it. God wants us to be happy but we are not; so now we wonder where is the disconnect? Something is omitted. So, we need to approach this from the categorical viewpoint. This verse only mentions inner happiness, and there is more info all over the place.

Doctrine of Happiness

Categorical teaching is not good unless you have perfect recall.

1. God had perfect happiness in eternity past and we cannot make God unhappy. He can make us happy. It includes an relaxed mental attitude and joy.
2. In eternity past, God desired to share His happiness with us in time.
3. Grace found a way for us to have God's happiness.
4. Man must enter into God's plan in order to have happiness.
5. Happiness is potential in God's plan. Happiness prior to the cross is temporary, superficial and non-sustaining. This is human happiness; unstable and dependent.
6. God has designed phase II happiness to be permanent and stabilized. The Word of God of permanent and stabilized. People are not stable. The best of people are not stable; money is not a stable factor. It is two words: Bible doctrine.
7. Such happiness has a two-fold connotation. *Ashere* means *blessed; happinesses*. It is in the plural; in the Greek, it is μακαριοι. It is happinesses.
8. The plural connotation is two-fold: two contributing sources. The concept is this: God wants you to be happy. You can be happy from the filling of the Spirit and soul-breathing (inhale and exhale of doctrine); and the 2nd connotation of the plural is, when you have +H, this gives you the ability to have overt happiness and you have mastery over the details of life. There are fantastic overt reverberations. Let's say that prosperity is maximum details of life. Ability to appreciate what you have. In place of it you have adversity; but +H can deal with adversity as well as prosperity.
9. Such happiness is maintained by a true happiness in life. The inhale of Bible doctrine through the left lung of the soul. Man does not live by bread alone but by every word that comes out of the mouth of God.
10. Such happiness provides mastery instead of slavery over the details of life. Mastery over areas of disillusion. If you are prone to disillusion, then you have no basis of countering that within yourself. This gives you a tremendous stability. Believer is happy regardless of his circumstances.
11. Inner happiness gives us another fantastic capacity: the capacity to love in all 3 categories. . love for the rm or the rw and friendship.
12. Ultimately, all happiness is based upon the inhale and exhale of doctrine. Jer. 15:16 1John 1:4 John
13. Happiness is commanded to the believer. Philip. 4:4
14. Happiness is designed to be perpetuated throughout the Church Age. John 17:13.

We began with the exegesis of John 17:13, we covered the categorical examination of happiness in this verse, and categorical truth helps us to apply doctrine to our own priesthood.

Review: Greek as a language, Koine Greek (sources); structure of the Koine Greek (tense, voice and mood); syntax of the language; etymology of the verb.

6. Nomenclature and to avoid semantics. Exegesis analyzes the text; categories investigates subjects from several sources. Exegesis means analysis. Categories means classifications. Classification demands assigning words to concepts. When you assign words to something, then you assign nomenclature to a concept. Concepts will not have to be reexplained every time we go this or that way. Details of life, for instance, gives us a concept, and it means something to us. Rebound must precede the filling of the Holy Spirit; and filling of the Holy Spirit is necessary for residual doctrine of the soul. Complete and total confidence.
7. Once you begin to build concept upon concept, now we get to hermeneutics. This is necessary to explain why we do it this way.
 - a. The Bible must be interpreted within the framework of its historical setting, which is isagogics. People fail to relate passages of Scripture to its historical setting.
 - b. The Bible must be interpreted on the basis of its grammar, syntax and the etymology of the original language, and this is called exegesis.
 - c. The Bible must be classified regarding its subject matter, and this is called categories. This brings up the law of hermeneutics, which is called the law of comparison of Scripture with Scripture. You put them together and get all of your categories this way.
 - d. The Bible must be interpreted according to certain fixed principles called hermeneutics. 6 axioms (a self-evident truth):
 - i. The true object of writing is the impartation of thought.
 - ii. Language is the reliable means of communicating thought.
 - iii. Usage determines the meaning of words.
 - iv. The function of words depends upon its association with other words in a sentence.
 - v. The true object of interpretation of interpretation is to appreciate the exact thought of the writer, as we are trying to appreciate and understand the mind of God.
 - vi. One cannot interpret without understanding what he interprets.
 - vii. There is the law of first mention: where
 - viii. Law of progression
 - ix. Law of unity
8. The concept of transmission of thought. , and there are 5 key words here:
 - a. Revelation is God the Holy Spirit revealing the content of the Word to the human writers.
 - b. Inspiration
 - c. Illumination is the pastor teacher understanding the passage.

- d. Interpretation is the pastor-teacher being able to compare and understand this in relationship to everything else
 - e. Communication is teaching.
9. The oppositional devices: there is opposition to Bible teachings
- a. The name calling device. You are a stagnate Christian.
 - b. Virtue word device, like we don't need to study all the tdoc, we just need to love each other.
 - c. The transfer of authority device. You cannot study the Bible for yourself; you leave it to the Bishop.
 - d. The unimpeachable authority of public opinion. The majority is right. We need more ecumenical sim.
 - e. The employment of testimonials from one who is respected; the Saturday morning breakfast. Or a status symbol giving his thoughts.
 - f. The card stacking device; mixing truth and error together.
 - g. The band wagon theme: all scholars agree. Bob faces this one a lot. Bob knows someone who is outstanding in Hebrew exegesis, but he gets afraid to express what he finds if it is not in agreement with what has already been taught. "I couldn't find the commentaries" someone tells Bob, and they are right. That part of seminary teaching is for the birds.

Lesson #28 How We Got our Bible Basic Bible Doctrine circa 9/1/69

4000-5000 years ago, writing was scarce and systems of writing were scarce. Not sure what the advantage will be to being able to write under water. This is undoubtedly quite important. That we have these things are all very wonderful. The objective is to tell you how these things came about.

3 factors in writing: a letter, a word, a sentence. In the ancient world, a letter was the sign of a sound, a word is a concept, and a sentence is a thought. The ancient world began with a pictogram, where a letter represented some sort of a thing, like beyth a house.

The Chinese language is an idea-gram type. A symbol for house, and two women in the house, and that means jealousy.

Phonogram, which is a symbol which represents a sound. We can actually see in our archeological studies all 3 kinds of writings. These go back before 2500 B.C. There are 3 kinds of phonograms. A word represents a concept; the symbol represents the entire word; the syllable phonogram (cuneiform writing); a letter phonogram, which requires an alphabet of words of a few thousand. A letter phonogram only calls for 20-30 letters, Hebrew, Chaldean and the Greek are all alphabetic languages. These are letter phonogram languages; writing is a very ancient art.

Napoleon going to Egypt did nothing for France, but it was a boost for archeology. Napoleon hauled the pope and his library to France and discovered some fantastic things.

Materials that were written on: clay tablets, many before 2500 B.C.; cylinders and flat tablets and then they would bake them, after writing on them. Pillars and stones were also used; Rosetta stone. Writing on lead in Job is mentioned. Gold, silver and bronze were used to write on. Some ivory tablets in Africa and Arabia and on wood, it was common.

Wax tablets were also used, especially for legal papers. Some wrote on linen.

Old Testament and Old Testament written on papyrus, vellum or reed. Peter, James and Paul probably wrote on papyrus. It was quite durable, but also quite common. Velum is a type of skin, made from calves and antelope primarily. Parchment is made from goatskin or sheepskin, so it is not as good. Paper was invented by the Chinese in the 2nd century B.C. and came into Europe about the 10th century A.D. In 1450, when printing was invented, paper seemed to be the best place to write, although many things continued to be written on Velum and parchment.

Inks of the ancient world were very durable, coming in black mostly, but 4 other colors. Some of the ink is 3000 years old, and still in excellent condition. Red, Green, blue and yellow, and all very durable. There were pens and engraving tools for writing on various types of metals; a sharpened sticks for clay tablets.

Calamus takes its name from a reed, and a hollow reed with the ink in the hollow section, and there was some kind of a vacuum system, and the reed could be constantly sharpened; and a knife was used to sharpen it, which is the source of our term the pen-knife.

God the Holy Spirit directed human writers so that God's complete thought was recorded. Moses wrote with clay tablets and velum and he wrote on rock itself.

The accuracy of the Bible. The history is accurate. Certain portions of the Word of God deal with law, governing national life and individuals. Some portions of the word was dictated.

Accurate speech recording, like Gen. 3:4. All of this is necessary to understand how we got our Bible today.

There were 4 types of manuscripts which we have found. Uncial manuscripts. No punctuation, no spaces, no breaks. Everything was done syntactically. Written on velum or parchment and the syntax was the basis for all punctuation. All capital letters.

Minuscule which began about the 10th century, which is written in small cursive letters.

Lectionaries which contain passages from the Bible. They would have a copy of the Word of God or in Latin or in some other language. Suppose the pastor wanted to read Rom. 5:1–12, so it would be copied out on a piece of paper or some sort. These things were taken from ancient manuscripts. Grouping of these passages are sometimes more ancient than the manuscripts which we have.

The papyri, from the paper they are written on. Starts about 300 A.D. and some even goes back a century or before that. It preserved well in Egypt and other hot and dry countries.

Many of us carry around the KJV, and they used 47 men to finish it (54 originally appointed), two teams at 3 schools each. Oxford, ?. Textus receptus was made late. 10th century manuscripts.

We have discovered since then up until 1969, 5000 manuscripts older than those used for the KJV.

Tischendorf was a professor at Lipsig University, and he was constantly looking for manuscripts of the Bible. He was going through the holy land and through Palestine. He stayed in the St. Catherine's monastery. It gets very cold there, so to start a fire, they were burning tons and tons of vellum and they burned vellum. Big baskets filled with this vellum. He looks at this stuff and he grabs it up. His eyes almost popped out of his head. He did not keep his cool, and they knew he was looking at something valuable. Beautiful ink and vellum and he discovered one of the most perfectly texts back to the 300's and called codex alex, with the Hebrew and the Greek. Some call it codex sinaiticus. He spent the rest of the summer and winter there and made a complete copy of it. The monks would not let him take it. He persuaded the Russians to get it out and preserve it and they went to Russia to study it. The British bought it for about a half million. This was 1933. By 1850, Tischendorf made this available to scholars all over the world, all 15 of them.

In 1859, Napoleon moved the pope and someone discovered codex b also called codex Vaticanus. About 15 years earlier than codex alex. They discovered that they had it about 18something. The pope took his library back to the vatican and he put it under wraps. Trigelles was a British student with a photographic mind. He requested permission to the vatican. He could look for 6 hours a day, and he would be searched going in and searched going out. And as soon as you pull out any paper, you will be thrown out. For 3 months Trigellus memorized for 6 hours and went back and wrote down what he memorized. He memorized on and on and it was one of the greatest memory feats of all time. He memorized the entire text. When the pope saw he had been so accurate, they finally agreed to publish it. From 1845 to 1850 or so, they cooled off, and then published it.

Rom. 8:1 and Mark 16 there are extra portions which do not belong in the Bible. Some ancient type tampered with the Bible.

3rd great manuscript called codex alexandrinus, in the library of Cleopatra apparently. She had one of the greatest libraries in the ancient world. Siar Lucus discovered it and took it to Constantinople for good luck. Thomas Row had a dull period as an ambassador to Turkey. He persuaded to be able to take the manuscript to present it in 1627, and about 16 years too late for the KJV.

Someone began to fiddle around in the Library of Paris. Catherine Demedici, one of the famous families in Italy. They maneuvered around and they were the history of Italy. He

was married to Henry IV, king of France. She had 4 sons who reigned in France. She got married off to this guy, so she carried her library. Father Ephraim and he wrote all of his sermons down, but he had no paper, but he discovered in Syria tons of velum. He erased the writing there and wrote his sermons on them. Velum is a skin, and even erased, the indentations are still there. What he did was to erase one of the finest of all the Bible manuscripts. 1553 is when he wrote these sermons. They ended up in the library of Paris and was looking at these manuscripts, and they restored the old manuscript. A palimpsest manuscript; erased and written over. Refreim rescriptus; so he is famous for erasing a Bible manuscript.

Grenfell and Hunt in an Egyptian town. They found a graveyard, but they only found a few mummies, but they did find something, about 2000 stuffed crocodiles and they figured underneath would be all of this gold and stuff. They were getting these crocks out of there and it turns out the crocks were stuffed with paper and writing. Many ancient manuscripts discovered, including Bibles as well. 1900 and hundreds of manuscripts discovered. British, Egyptian museums have these and not completed the studied of these.

Chester Beaty wandering around the holy land the Egypt and someone offered him some ancient manuscripts and he bought a huge amount. Most willed to the University of Pennsylvania.

Deism an from "Light from the Ancient East."

The Bible is based upon Hebrew, Chaldean and Koine Greek, so that we can take the text and tell you exactly what it is.

what about the English?

680 A.D. a Cadmund, a stable boy, and invited into the castle during the Christmas season, and they would pass around a stringed instrument. He was embarrassed and he was determined that he would be able to strike up a song. He practiced that year and next Christmas, they handed him some kind of a stringed instrument, a Lyre, I'm not, but it is. He amazed them. He was launched on a great singing career. Everyone sang in Latin, which was the official language in England. He resented all of these snickers by the aristocracy, so he sang in Anglo Saxon, which is middle German. He found a sympathetic monk, who translated the first chapter of Genesis into anglo saxon. They wanted him to learn the next few chapters. He did the Pentateuch and did Daniel and then he died. For the first time, the Scripture was in the language of the people. People were starting for the Word of God in their own language. There must have been many who believed listening to his singing.

A bishop heard him, Eldhelm, the bishop of sharebourne in south England. He translated the psalms into anglo saxon.

Then there is Bede, the venerable Bede, the first British historian. He knew that people needed the gospel message in their own language. He could read the Latin, Greek and

Hebrew; and he decided to pick one book, so he chose the book of John. He translated it while dying. Got to the last chapter and he had to dictate it. The scribe said, just rest, don't try to finish this. He said, Now my sons have the gospel in their own language and he died.

Another great man who became the king of England known as Alfred the Great, and saw what had been done, and he decided that every freeborn youth in his kingdom before doing anything would learn to read the Anglo-Saxon language and to learn the Scripture that way. He and other scholars translated all of the entire Bible into Anglo-Saxon. It was a law that everyone had to read the language and the Scriptures. They could not serve in the army, enter into business, until he passed a reading test based on the Word of God.

1380 Wycliffe a born again priest and could see the fallacy of the Vulgate, the common Bible of the Roman Catholic church, so he translated the Bible into Anglo-Saxon. The English language was changing considerably. Middle English is what it is called, but it is really Middle German. The Normans invaded who spoke a combination of Scandinavian French and they did not like the Anglo-Saxon language, and these languages were blended for another English. Wycliffe made a translation, but it would not hold up. The pope tried to put him on the spot for this thing. They could not reach out to England and do anything.

Tindale went to work and he had to leave England and go to Germany and in Worms translated the Bible into English and smuggled it back into England. Charles V was a rat sat on the throne in Spain, but ruled over most of Europe. He was one of the worst rats outside of his son who was less intelligent and more of a jerk. He was a rabid Roman Catholic and he decided that he needed to kill Tyndale. Lord open the eyes of the king of England was the last thing that he said. 100 years later this prayer was answered.

Mary Stuart was a beautiful woman but a rabid Roman Catholic. He married Lord Darnley a Scot and a Catholic. James VI of Scotland and James I of England. 17 years of plots to get rid of her or Elizabeth. Presbyterians got a hold of James and taught him Calvinistic theology and Latin and English and Greek and Hebrew. The rise of the line of Stuarts there.

A petition taken to parliament to King James if he would be pleased to have an English translation in the language of the day. Shakespeare, Christopher Marlowe, glorious time for English literature. What appealed to King James, he could come up with a Bible no one had before. He granted the petition and he picked 57 men, who were Hebrew or Greek scholars. No phonies. It happened that the old time fundies were there, some Puritans and they were in on it. Some were atheists and some were church of England.

All fundies are not clucks. It just so happened, and Bob likes the KJV better than anything he has seen. Some of these translators were atheists. They were experts in the language. This was not some holy project, but these men were told to get canked up in 1604 and several died before finishing. Oxford, Cambridge, Westminster hosted 6 teams, 2 at each campus. Some differences of the translations based upon the campus where they worked. One team worked on the Apocrypha. Finished 1611 A.D. Such a hugh and cry and people

screamed. Romans said it favored protestantism; Amrninians said it favored Calvinism; the Puritans did not like the word church, ordain and bishop; did not like the word easter. When the printers got it, they made over 400 typos. Between all of these, everyone complained. No one liked it. Most unpopular tranaslition to come off the press. Only one person liked it. James Stuart the 1st, said, in effect, to hell with everyone, I authorize this version. He ruled over England, Scotland and Ireland, if Ireland can be ruled over. 15 years later Row brought back the manuscript from Turkey. 200 years of great struggle. 1516 to 1750 there is the period of Textus Receptus, which are the 7 manuscripts used to translated into the KJV. In 1750, the rise of textual criticism, 1750 to 1830 and they said, the KJV is good, but the Textus Receptus is not good. 1830 to 1969 the improved text. Hort, Nestle, Tischendorf, Von Soden and many others made fantastic contributions which formed a text which takes us back to the original text. There are over 5000 manuscripts older than 10th century. Lockman and Tischendorf and Trigellus and Alfred and Wescott and Hort (who worked together for 30 years) and Nestle (which Bob uses) and Von Soden (who died in battle). Deisman fed information to all of them.

This Bible has a great history going through all the forms of English, and all the things involved in it, and we have today a translation which is a great translation and we can correct these manuscripts and the memory feat of Trigellus, and Tishcendorf stumbling over a trash can of manuscripts.

So, there is a lot of amplifying and a lot of correction, so we can have exactly what God wants us to have.

Canonicity: a ruler or a norm. Some books are in and some books are out.

Old Testament and every writer of the Old Testament had the gift of prophecy. Moses was the greatest prophet who ever lived until Jesus Christ. He wrote the Torah. Those books are in and other books written at the same time were not included. Second group called the Naviim and these are those with the gift of prophecy. Joshua, Judges, Samuel, and Kings. Samuel wrote judges and portions of samuel. These are called the former prophets.

Next are the latter prophets: Isaiah, who wrote in classical Hebrew; Jeremiah in Koine Hebrew; language of the street. He would shock you. Ezekiel is somewhere in btween. Then the 12 which is all of the short prophets.

Magic book of Moses and the Penenatance of Janis and Jambres, which some tried to get shoved in and they were not put in. The canon kept it out. We have in our English Bible exactly what the Word of God is. Everything else is out.

The writings, just those with the gift of prophecy. Beings with Job, Psalms and Proverbs. Then the Megalith, which are 5 rolls of Esther (many did not want that book in) the Song of Solomon, Ruth, Ecclesiastes, and Lamentations, all read at various particular times. Then the historical books, which included Ezra/Nehemiah, Chronicles, Daniel all were at

the end. This gives us 24 books in the Hebrew with a better arrangement. Kethvim, the 3rd section,

What book is allowable and what is not. What is wrong with 1and2Maccabees and what about Bel and the Dragon?

Bob brought some samples of what is done in the English. Rotherham's slavishly literal version. Septuagint in a beautiful form. Amplified Bible, and take 5 words to translate one. Sometimes helpful. He would say "zut" on them.

Philips letters to young Christians, with beautiful English, but you can write "zut" across the whole thing.

New Scofield. Piss and dung passage you may want to look up.

New English Bible. Looks like the rest, beautiful and useless.

Novum something else. I think I have this one.

Lampsa, the Scripture from the Aramaic, taken from the Pershitto. Helps in textual criticism.

A New Testament written in Hebrew.

Weymouth gives an accurate and excellent translation of the New Testament.

A courageous and honest translation made by the Darby the Plymouth Brethren group. Excellent translation.

Gideon testament. Bob got letters from all over the world about this. Wrote in blood from one guy who believed in Christ before he died.

These are not for sale and they are not for free. Display only.

Lesson #29

Canonicity Basic Bible Doctrine

circa 9/8/69

Why do we have certain books in the Bible and why we don't have others. Canon is a criterion or a ruler or a standard; a straight line. It is a collection of books which are found in most Bibles.

Why do we need a canon?

1. So believers have something compatible with spiritual growth. It is vitally necessary to have the information available to us. Revelation closed out the canon, so all other types of revelation are no longer extent. No more dreams, visions, trances, God speaking to people. God no longer speaks to people and anyone who claims

to speak to anyone, get them into the psycho ward. God speaks through His Word, so we have to know His Word and study His Word. The Bible communicates the plan of God to us. We have no divine guidance without it. A lot more weirdness in LA like this. God speaks through His Word and it is in writing and it is permanent.

2. This way we have a divine textbook; a ruler.
3. So that the manuscripts from inspired writings to know what needs to be preserved. During the Diocletian persecution, the believers needed to know which books to protect. What do you defend and what do you let them burn? What is spurious and what is genuine? People must know what the limits of the Canon.

Torah is written by Moses; he is the unique prophet of the Old Testament. Then the Naviim, which means prophets, and they have the office of prophets and the gift of prophets. Divided into the former prophets and the latter prophets. Joshua, Judges, Samuel and Kings. Each is one book in the original. The latter prophets: Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel and the 12. 3rd portion is the Kethuvim, which is the writings, and these only had the gift of prophecy, not the office. Psalms, proverbs and Job. Megalith, which is the 5 rolls: SoS, Ruth, Lamentations, Esther and Ecclesiastes. Passover, Pentecost, Tabernacles, Purim, anniversary of destruction of Jerusalem by Nebuchadnezzar are the occasions when they are read.

Criterion for the Old Testament Canon

what is the determining factor?

1. Every extent book written by an accepted prophet of God who was commissioned by God to make known His will was accepted immediately as the Word of God. Internal evidence backs this up. Deut. 31:26–28 Neh. 8:1–8 Zech. 7:12 Daniel 9:2
2. Quotation of Old Testament Scriptures in the New Testament, and they are declared to be the Word of God.
3. Public official action. Decline of a nation: socialism, religiosity, legalism, liberalism, all would cause a decline. When in the 4th cycle, they knew they were going down. So, they realized they needed doctrine to get back on their feet. They had to know what books to read and they would read them publically. Prophets and priests would read the Word of God and they would do it publically. Law of cause and effect. Recognition of the Canon does not cause them to be part of the canon; the fact that they are the Word of God makes them the Word of God. Man's recognition of these books did not make them canonical. Man just recognized what was there. "I see a lot of you here for the first time tonight; God help you."
4. During the 5th cycle, there was a resurgence of doctrine. The Jews had their golden age after this? During this period of the 5th cycle, the Jews became aware of the importance of the written word to their heritage. They became conscious of the canon of Scripture. They became aware of their canon and the importance of it. Haggai, Zechariah and Ezra and Nehemiah wrote at this period 516 B.C. and Malachi wrote about 425 B.C., and closed out the canon. We can thank Josephus for this, who became a Roman general and then a Roman historian. There was this

character named Apion. He opened his big fat mouth and said there was no such thing as Scripture. Josephus, an unbeliever, knew better. He was pro-Rome all the way and he could not let this kind of thing pass. He personally was not emotionally involved. Apion was a college professor, know-it-all, and Josephus wrote a book *Contra Apion* or *Against Apion*. Josephus is an unbeliever. He is simply dealing with the historical information. He was just interested in accuracy of history. FDR was the greatest traitor there was, giving away most of the world to Communism. Liberals write history and it is pitiful. Economic interpretation of history when Thieme was in college. Slanted history. Today, we don't get American history anymore, but we get socialism and liberalism. Josephus said a man should record the facts without interpreting the facts. He should do whatever he can to be accurate. Douglas Freeman in 3 volumes on Lee's Lieutenants does a perfect job. These were believers who were generals. John Brown Gordon, Stonewall Jackson, Jeb Stuart. Freeman recorded what was said, even though he was not a believer. Flavius Josephus was the same way. He started out in the Jewish army and he did not like the Jews; he liked the Romans. But he would not let Apion get away with historical inaccuracy. From Moses to Artaxerxes I and he demonstrates that there never was a time when the Jews did not accept their text as the Word of God. He did not agree with this, but he had to be accurate. He also said nothing was added to the canon after that, because the line of prophets ended at the point. No more prophets.

5. Transitional Greek from the Attic Greek to the Koine Greek. So 72 men got together and translated the Septuagint. In order to do a translation, they needed to know what books were inspirational. The translators were Jews and there was no problem deciding what to translate. They knew what the canon was. It was a matter of knowing. They did not translate the apocrypha.
6. The Talmud 400 B.C.–500 A.D. and this was stuff written by Rabbis. There was always canonicity consciousness. When anyone was writing, they all agreed on the extent of the canon. Occasionally a cult would rise up and try to slip a book into the canon. For 1000 years, there was not writer, of hundreds of Rabbis, and there were different editors, and it was like a quarterly magazine to come out for about 1000 years with huge groups of men wrote. Whenever the subject came up, the opinion of Canonicity was always the same.
7. Luke 11:51 Matt. 23:36 takes us from Gen. 4:10 to 2Chronicles.
8. Eusibuis said that all of the Old Testament Canon and all were acceptable in his day except a lot of people could not figure out why Esther was in there.
9. Xerxes and his men would stop by a lake and drink it all up. Took years to clean up after they left behind all their beer cans. One part of Esther is out of sight out of mind; that is Vasti.
10. Tertullion said he knew why Esther belonged in the canon (although we don't have where he said why).
11. Homologoumena is category 1. These are the books from the 4th and 5th centuries which were undisputed books. All agreed on these books.

12. Antilegomena, which included books the patristics argued about. Esther, Song of Solomon (too sexual?), Ecclesiastes (the ideas could not be reconciled with Bible doctrine); Ezekeiel because 40–48 deals with the Millennial use of sacrifices; and Proverbs bothered them. They said, “They contradict each other.” That is a great cover.
13. Psuedapigrapha, and these are books at the time of the patristics, they were finding Dead Sea Scrolls things and they would say, “Hey, this ought to go in.” Cults wrote books like the Penitence of Janis and Jambres (lifted out of Timothy or somewhere). And this book allowed for weird crap. Phoney forgery. Some said Moses spoke in tongues, we have the magic book of Moses and they wanted that to be put into the canon. Psuedipigrapha filled with those which were rejected.
14. The apocrypha, which are books written after 424 B.C. after the canon was closed and they were often claimed to be canonical. They were rejected as being spurious and fraudulent. Brauch, Judith, Tobit, 1Maccabees, and most written in Greek and some in Aramic. These books do give some historical info.
 - a. Never in Hebrew canon and written after the canon was closed.
 - b. Not one line from the apocrypha was quoted by Jesus Christ or any New Testament writer.
 - c. Josephus expressly excludes them in Contra Apion.
 - d. They were never found in any of the catalogues of canonical books of the Church Age.
 - e. None of the apocrypha books claimed dvin inspiration or divine authority.
 - f. No prophet was ever connected with the writing of any of these books.
 - g. The apocryphal books has historical, chronological and geographical errors. They have distorted Old Testament narratives.
 - h. They teach doctrines and practices which are contrary to the Scripture. Salvation by tithing, alms giving; traducionism taught; hatred of the Samaritans, and other false doctrines.
 - i. Tobit –1:4–5 200 years old Tobit 14:15 Nineveh taken by Nebuchadnezzar and someone else, but it was taken by someone else.
 - ii. Judith 1:1 Nebuchadnezzar is said to reign over the Assyrians at Nineveh, which is impossible and ridiculous.
 - iii. 2Maccabees 14:51–56 says suicide is okay.
 - iv. Prayers and offerings for the dead recommended in 2Maccabees.
 - v. Ecclesiasticus, give all your money to the priest or to someone. 33;26 if you have slaves, tret them cruelly as possible.
 - vi. Wisdom of Solomon, the doctrine of Emminations, which is neo-Platonist.
 - vii. Pre-existence of souls.
 - viii. In the book of Judith, there was a demon called Asmadias who went for the females and fell in love with a woman with 7 bf’s and he

murders all of them. Bf 8 sees that Judith has a problem, so he burns the heart and liver of a fish, and then marries the girl.

New Testament Canon

1. Every writer was either an Apostle or closely associated with one.
2. Books immediately accepted by all churches.
3. Consistency: every New Testament book was consistent with the doctrine already received.
4. Inspiration: does the book give evidence of being divinely inspired.
5. Criterion recognition by those who had the gift of pastor-teacher and the catalogues of the patristics.
6. Internal and public communication. Col. 4:16 Rev. 1:3 2:7 3:13 2Peter 3:15-16
7. History divided into 3 periods. 70–170 A.D. collection of books.
8. 170–303 which is the period of the canon existing in local churches and the complete separation of the canonical books from other writings.
9. Church council period.
10. Clement of Rome in 96 quotes Scriptures. Ignatius quotes Matthew, John and the Pauline epistles, Polycarp, Justin Martyr, etc.
11. 170–303 there were catalogues. Moratorium fragments: library cards and a copy of the canon of Scripture.
12. They began to set up an antilegomena; they began to question certain books, that they did not know what to do with. 2Peter so different in style is quite different. Hebrew had no author named. 2and3John too short. James was disliked because there were too many James'. They did not understand who wrote Revelation: which John; Jude was too short and which Jude?
13. Diocletian became emperor of the Roman empire and he hated Christians, and he wanted to get rid of them, and any memory of them, and he put out an edict to destroy their Scriptures; and he knew what the canon was. If he could figure out the canon, then we could as well. The Christians got wind of this and they had to decide on the canon as well. They had to settle the controversy in a hurry to know which books to protect.
14. Constantine became a Christian and he was so eager for doctrine and he was so suspicious of some of the preachers, he wanted to study the Bible himself, and he asked for 50 copies of the Bible. Everyone knew what to copy. No Paul and Thekla, etc.
15. Council of Laodicea and decided to see if they could pull together on a few doctrines. They had to agree on a criterion.
16. 270–340 Eusebius and he set up a system for classifying the whole system of the canon. Homologumena means all agree. Gospels, acts, Pauline epistles, 1Peter and revelation. Then they began on James Jude, 2Peter, 2&3 John. Those were the disputed books. Antilegomena. Then a New Testament apocrypha, the spurious writings, which included the acts of Paul, Shepherd of Hermes, the

Revelation of Peter, the Epistle of Barnabas. Then the absurd writings, the psuedipigrapha, and that is the gospel of Peter, the gospel of Thomas, the acts of Andrew. Then they decided to stop all of this nonesnese. In the next 75 years, there were church councils on this. Council of Laodician, of Hippo, of 2 others, and agreement on all of these canons.

17. There is one other approach, which is the internal Bibliology; 7 approaches:
- a. Continuity: written over a period of 1600 years and it includes 40 authors and they were kings, peasants, physicians, fishermen, statesmen, scholars, philosophers. Every personality. Perfect agreement of type and antitype, prophecy and fulfilment, and the progression of doctrine. That is the doctrine of continuity.
 - b. An inexhaustible extent of revelation. Heaven and hell, the soul, invisible things, which are clearly and accurately described.
 - c. The output: the Bible has the greatest output and circulation in all history. 972 languages and dialects at this point in time.
 - d. Principle of unprejudiced authority; his doom, failures, sicknesses, etc. were all known. Solomon was a collector of women, and he wrote about the woman who jilted him. Hosea writing about his wife running away with a prince. He spoke about paying to get her back off the slave market.
 - e. The most influential book in history. Saved the Roman empire. Cæsar cut off by assassination. 96–192 was a golden period of time in Rome and one of the greatest periods of time to live in, during the Antonine Caesars.
 - f. Rise of the British empire and what they did for India and Africa. Brought Africa out of the stone age. Made it possible for millions to accept Christ as savior.
 - g. In history, it is the most attacked book. Cosmos diabolicus.
 - h. It is not a scientific textbook but it is always accurate in dealing with scientific phenomena.
 - i. Job 38:31–32 the movement of planets, hinge, axle, a body which moves around and others move around it like a pivot.
 - ii. Jer. 10:13 static electricity. Static electricity can be formed by the condensation of vapor.
 - (1) Isa. 40:2 earth is a sphere.
 - (2) Luke 17:31–36 makes sense if the earth rotates on its axis.
 - (3) law of gravity in Job.
 - (4) Ruwach means wind or air and no scientist prior to Galileo knew air had weight. Job.
 - (5) Winds have regular circuits. Evaporation and precipitation. Outgoings; radiations. Psalm 65:8 and light plays music.
 - (6) circulation of blood.
 - (7) communicable diseases and quarantine long before it was found in science.

A new increment next time. We will develop all of the factors next time in a particular chapter of the Bible.

Lesson #30 Spirituality Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter. 1:1–2 circa 9/15/69

Moratorium does not have anything to do with kooksville. It is a good night to have a Bible and be in a place where there is free speech. Our freedoms are based upon the Word of God. Our low moment when FDR betrayed us to the Communists, beginning a low moment. Tomorrow will be a day of infamy. Everything which we have in our country is worth fighting for and is worth dying for. The fact that we are able to gather and study the Word of God is a great privilege. This could never occur in a Communist country. Freedom is based on divine institution #1. We also have freedom. Freedom before God and freedom as members of the human race. With this freedom goes responsibility. You cannot have privilege without responsibility. Communists have decided how to defeat us from within, and they studied prisoners in the Korean war, and they learned that they could use certain techniques.

A person at one time without being in business and marriage, and they had no say in government. Violation of academic discipline at one time, and college removed them. Along came WW2 and the average American was willing and eager to meet the enemy and meet the challenge. Little did he realize that he could just buy time. We lost great men in the Philippines, some of the finest soldiers we have ever had. We bought time in the far east and we disappointed our resources, and we bailed the Communists out when we should not have. Since that time, something has happened to this country. This can be demonstrated from history without going to the Word of God. We have too many examples from history. When freedom does not carry with its responsibility, there is a distortion, and loss. Those who are irresponsible with freedom become slaves to some power. Tomorrow will be a commentary on confused and mixed up generation. The stupidity of this thing is almost unbelievable. These kids are sincere, and sincerity never cut any ice anywhere, except to impress someone who is stupider. "I have never had a military organization where I did not weed out the sincere crowd." He kept the hell-raisers and Christians who were squared away; and never had a failing organization.

Part is the responsibility of young people; part is our vacillating leadership. There has never been a clear declaration of information in this generation of young people. Apart from the response to Bible doctrine of some, they would be worthless.

What do you tell those going into the service? Suppose they are in a dangerous spot, they just do their job as unto the Lord. God's hand is not shortened by human stupidity. If Bob was in college now, he'd leave college and go into the military. Our country is worth fighting for and worth dying for.

When Bob saw them on tv, he could not tell if they had had a bath or not. National news media giving time to mixed up, effeminate, gypsies; that they are allowed to speak representing anything American, is really tragic. The only thing which will bail us out of this

mess is Bible doctrine. We have freedom of speech and freedom of worship. Since we are believer priests, rebound.

We are dealing with hermeneutics tonite.

4 Laws of Hermeneutics

1. The science of Biblical interpretation. 4 basic laws. The law of first mention; the meaning of a word is by its first use in context. In the same context, it should have the same meaning (different meaning in a different context).
2. Law of progress; God reveals His doctrines, plans and eternal purpose gradually and progressively. The mysteries were not revealed until just before the Church Age. There is a law of progression.
3. A law of unity; all parts of Scripture agree without an actual discrepancy. Doctrine is progressive, but it never loses its unity.
4. The law of recurrence. The Holy Spirit goes over the same ground, adding detail and following a principle of teaching by repetition.

Most of you have had geometry.

8 Axioms

1. The true object of speech is the impartation of thought. We have been exposed to speech with no thinking. Words put together do not necessarily reflect thought.
2. Language is a reliable means of communication, which knocks out tongues. People must receive communication in their own language, in the language in which they think. The Bible was written in 3 languages, so it becomes necessary to go back to the original languages in order to determine the exact meaning of the writer.
3. Usage determines the meaning of words. A perfect illustration from 1John 1:9 *ομολογῶ* = *to speak the same thing; to cite, to identify, to confess*. A word begins to be used one way, but through change, changes the meaning of a word. Moratorium is being misused in this Student Moratorium (tomorrow).
4. The function of words depends upon its association with other words. This is sometimes true of people too.
5. The true object of interpretation is to apprehend the exact thought of the author. What was he actually thinking and trying to say.
6. Truth must accord with truth. Truths may be harmonized when the facts are known. In translation, there are often apparent discrepancies. Once the facts are known, the discrepancies are harmonized.
7. An assertion of truth excludes that to which it is opposed. Illustration: the Bible does not condone the conscientious objector. The Bible does not condone disarmament as a means of world peace. It is clear to have peace is to be so tough that no one will fool with you. 6 months after being in Vietnam, we could have wiped out all North Vietnam. Instead of bombing trucks and the foliage of trees, and other countries would respect us. We could follow the MacArthur system of envelopment.

Pick a spot, hit them hard, move from there; and have the Navy sink every ship which goes into their harbor. It is long since we have shown that we are a strong nation. Let the military run the war.

8. One cannot interpret without understanding what he interprets.

Bob was asked as a pastor if he would join in this demonstration; the person who asked the question would have no trouble understanding and interpreting his answer. Religion is always on the wrong side; national council of churches.

3 Principles of Hermeneutics

These are always involved with the axioms. They grow out of the 8 axioms.

1. Exegesis. This is the analysis of the original language of Scripture.
2. Categorizing. This takes a point of doctrine which occurs in a passage, and examines it wherever it occurs. About 35 types of doctrine in this passage, and they occur throughout Scripture. Categories have slots in your soul.
3. Isagogics, which is the historical perspective of the time of writing. This word was to introduce or to provide background. History, literature, everything that is necessary to reproduce the exact situation under which the man wrote. The Jews are about to go out under the 5th cycle of discipline. There is a lot of corruption based upon legalism; and all that Jeremiah says must be understood in its historical context. Psalm 8 important when you know the background in Davidic history. When you reproduce the background, interpretation becomes simple. Many have been receiving Isagogics, categories and exegesis without knowing what you were getting.

The writer of this epistles wrote from Rome, but he did not usually spend much time in Rome. Paul is on his way to Spain at this time. He is going to Spain to evangelize. There are people in Spain ready for the word. Rome conquered, wild tribes revolted, and they were suppressed and Spain became a law and order place. Then there is the need for the message, and the primary disseminator of this is Paul. Paul had the temperament for travel. He was the most informed my of his day. He was able to make the gospel clear. He was lucid in his communication. Whenever a wild nation was brought under the control of Rome, Paul was ready to go.

Neronian persecutions occurred at this time. Peter knows they will send a tribune. Nero used Christians to light as human torches. Christians tied to stakes and they would be doused in oil and burn them. He has heard that there are Christian in Anatolia, and he wanted to go there and get more Christians. Peter wants them to know certain principles and he knows they will suffer and he has to prepare these Christians for great suffering. They would be under a tremendous amount of pressure. Many things which are said can only be understood on the principle of isagogics. We can reproduce the life of the times. This is no accident; it is a part of the grace of God and the plan of God. Nothing in the Bible was meant to be abstruse to believers. It is important for us to understand these principles.

We identify the author.

1Peter 1:1: Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, To those who are elect exiles of the dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

A man who is sent out to command a fleet and he is the highest ranking officer on a mission; the girt of field marshal; the gift of 5 star general. It is a rank which only existed until the completion of the canon of Scripture. This is not simply a *person sent out*.

They are called *strangers*, but they are not. Παρεπιδημος = *people who were born in one country, but now they are residing in a different country*. These are Jewish believers who are living in a Roman country. Εκλεχτος = *elected one, the elect*. As long as you are on this life, God has a purpose for you life. God's plan goes on. There is no word *elect* in v. 2. Διασπορος = *dispersion, scattered believers, those living in other provinces*.

All of the 5 provinces of genitive singular. They are permanent residents of these 5 provinces. Peter travels in a circle in Turkey here. Lychia and Pamphilia were not provinces at this time that Peter writes, so they are left out. Category of election. Doctrine of spiritual gifts; doctrine of Apostleship. Isagogics give us the background and why Peter is writing and not Paul. There must be order and there must be order in any kind of an epistles. We must find our outline or our clue from our passage.

Temptation for a pastor to get into alliteration. In homeletics, you had the turn in an alliteration to one particular profession.

1Peter 1:2 according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, in the sanctification of the Spirit, for obedience to Jesus Christ and for sprinkling with his blood: May grace and peace be multiplied to you.

Grace is multiplied in 8 ways: in the termini of God's plan, in suffering, in faith rest, in occupation with Christ, plan of God (all matched with verses), canon of Scripture; the multiplication of peace.

There is an approach of homiletics today; the big thought idea. There are a lot of thoughts; the Holy Spirit did not design it for one big thought. In developing grace, you might lose track. The outline is suggested on the pattern of thought. You may have to take a course in homiletics, but it is mostly lame. The responsibility of the pastorate is communication. Get it to the people so that they can understand. Some men never get over homiletics. Some get a lame outline from this. Do not outline a passage until you have exegeted it

The subject of this passage is grace.

Unto you is dative of advantage. When you are the recipient of grace, you have peace. This is stability of soul and found under the concept of reconciliation. Πλαηθυνω = *to be multiplied*. Aor passive optative. Aorist is when the edification complex is constructed and functions. This is in the inhale of Bible doctrine; it is a public teaching situation. The

exhale of Bible doctrine is the production end. As you develop, you maximize. Passive voice: grace and peace you do not deserve, you receive them. Optative mood expresses Peter's desire.

You cannot sit down and take it in on your own. You will have to get to a point where you become spiritually self sustaining.

A norm or standard is κατά + προγνωσις = *before knowledge*. The meaning of words is determined by its relationship to other words. The norm or standard is prognosis. It means a pre-determined purpose based upon God's omniscience. It is a technical word.

Predetermined Plan

A technical word covers a whole area of thinking. One word is used to describe a concept.

1. God the Father is the author of the plan of mankind, which is based upon divine knowledge.
2. Divine knowledge includes everything that will ever happen. God knows everything that will ever happen before anything happened.
3. God knew all of the decisions and how they would affect one another, and put the whole thing together.
4. He knew billions of years ago who would believe in Christ and who would reject Christ.
5. Volition is free of choice. God is smart enough to know how free will in man will decide.
6. Foreknowledge does not imply divine coercion. God is a gentleman. At sometime in our life, we will blame God for something that we do. Don't come up with, *why did God let me get involved with this? Why did he let me get married?* God does not lead us into this type of thing.
7. The Father's foreknowledge recognizes every person who will believe in Christ in the Church Age. He knew that we would believe.
8. In eternity past, God the Father elected Christ, and during the Church Age, places into union with Christ everyone who believes. God had a pre-determined plan for the Church Age. God the Son had to become man; He was God and man in one person forever. At the Church Age, every believer is entered into union with Christ. This is really a concept more than a doctrine. Foreknowledge is a technical term.

By means of the sanctification of the Spirit. This is the sanctification of the Spirit in this passage. Two other doctrines, sanctification, the baptism of the Holy Spirit, and the doctrine of positional truth, and all are involved with this *sanctification of the Spirit*. *Unto obedience* is a prepositional phrase. Υπακωή = *compliance*; it is where we enter into the plan of God. Πιστεύω lines up with grace, which could be developed in 7 points.

Sprinkling is Isagogics. Burnt offering, blood has to do with a representative analogy. The blood of Jesus Christ. Jesus is the title of His humanity; Christ is His commission; Lord

refers to His deity. Jesus is appointed; He is also Lord. Jesus wept; only his human name is given because deity cannot weep.

The Doctrine of the Hypostatic Union

this doctrine is suggested by the phrase Jesus Christ

1. In the person of Christ there are two natures, human and divine, inseparably united, without mixture or loss or identity, without loss or transfer of properties or attributes, the union being personal and eternal. Jesus Christ is a person; He will always be the God man.
2. Two words with Jesus Christ. Philp. 2:5–11 Rom. 9:5 Itim. 3:16 Heb. 2:14 are some of the Scriptures dealing with it.
3. The incarnate person of Christ includes undiminished deity. Jesus Christ is coequal and coeternal with the Father and the Spirit.
4. Jesus Christ is true humanity with a body a soul and a spirit, but the soul does not possess an old sin nature.
5. The two natures of Christ are united without transfer of attributes. The attributes adhere to their corresponding natures. God is immutable; He cannot change. Infinity cannot transfer to the finite. To rob God of His essence would destroy deity; to rob His humanity of anything would mean that Jesus is not really man.
6. Certain attributes of deity were not used, but they were not destroyed. This is the true doctrine of kenosis. Jesus Christ was very hungry as anyone would be after going for so long without food. Satan gave Him a real temptation to turn stones into bread, and such a choice would have been to step outside God's plan for Him. Christ voluntarily restricted the use of His deity. The Father had a plan and Christ adhered to it; we have plan and we are in a simplified form.
7. Therefore, the union of divine and human natures must be considered personal and hypostatic from the Greek word hypostasis. Heb. 11:1 1:3 faith is the substance of things hoped for.
8. This does not mean that deity possessed His humanity. His deity did not possess His humanity. The union is more than harmony and sympathy.
9. Therefore the attributes of divine and human nature belong to the person of Jesus Christ. He can be weak and omnipotent, ignorant and omniscient, all at the same time.
10. In the hypostatic union, there are categories of attributes. 3 categories:
 - a. True of His entire person: prophet, priest, king Savior, redeemer
 - b. True of His Deity: before Abraham was, I existed eternally.
 - c. True of His humanity; John 19:28 when He said, "I thirst."
11. In conclusion: everything that Jesus said came either from His Deity, humanity or His hypostatic union. Knowing this solves many such discrepancies.
 - a. **Before Abraham was, I existed eternally**, speaks of His Deity.
 - b. **I thirst** is spoken from His humanity.

Sooner or later, you will run into someone who will know two verses which contradict one another. There is a discrepancy which I have discovered. They will present two verses and say, "These are contradictory." And if you can't answer it, it may neutralize your spiritual life. You may simply not have enough information.

Matt. 24 there will be wars and rumors of wars until I come; and in Isaiah, the swords will be turned into plowshares, etc. Knowing dispensations clears this up immediately

Lesson #31 Exegetical Study Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter 1:3 circa 9/22/69

we see the multiplication of God's grace. The Greek verbal adjective ευλογητος what you think in your soul is the basis of your happiness or unhappiness. You celebrate in your soul. This word is used only of God and response to God's grace and God's plan in your soul. The source of the divine plan is God the Father. God the Father and God the Son existed in eternity past when the plan of God was formulated. Πολους = *great in quality, great in quantity*. Mercy is ελεος and it also means compassion, and it is grace in action. Grace found a way to save us, a way to provide for us in eternity. Those we an edification complex structure have something about which they can celebrate. Αναγιναω = *to be born again, to be regenerated*. Aorist tense is the point of time that we believe in Jesus Christ; active voice, participle. At the moment we were born again, we are born into a family. Because of relationship with Him. We are born into His family, and therefore He can only provide for His family. A parent provides for his child no matter whether the kid is good or bad. A parent does not remove a child's clothes, send them outside, and refuse them food; that denies the relationship. God provides for us whether we are raunchy or good.

We enter into a relationship with God on a nonmeritorious basis; billions of years ago, God knew that He would be stuck with us and He knew what a sorry lot that we would be. And He knew that He would be stuck with us. Yet, He finds a way in grace to love us no matter what sort of children we turn out to be. Peter is celebrating; he is responding to the grace of God. People usually talk about grace when they receive something. Peter talks about it because it exists in eternity past, billions of years before Peter comes on the scene. God provided everything for Peter way back then. With regards to time, *what do you have that you did not receive?* We might be happy as can be with a great vehicle, but the best car in the world will not stay around forever. Bob brought a cad put together by hand, and it ran 200,000 miles. A 12 passenger automobile. Some gangster owned it and Bob almost bought it because it had a place for his tommygun. Bob was stuck with this car for 5 years and it was a fantastic automobile. That car is gone now; time has caught up with it. Bob many times thanked God for this car, but that car is gone. However, the source of everything that Bob would ever have has been around forever. When you get oriented to grace, you thank God for Who and What He is. When you catch onto this, then you celebrate. All of this is based upon the fact that, billions of years ago, God found a way. His love will never change or diminish or fluctuate. Our starting point is this word for being born again.

Εἰς + ζῶω as a present active participle; always living, believer always lives, and the participle says that this is God's law and it cannot be changed. We are born again, which is an aorist, which is a starting point. No termination point. A confidence in the unseen. Confidence in that which you cannot see, hold or touch. This refers to the rapture of the church, at the point at which we receive our resurrection bodies. Δία + genitive, which means *through* the resurrection. Ἀναστασις = *again stand, resurrection*. Be begin being born-again, which leads us to standing again. This is the basis for our confidence in this. The exegesis always suggests a category. There are two resurrections.

Resurrection

1. The first stage of Abel company, which is the resurrection of Jesus Christ. 1Cor. 15 every man in his own battalion. Rom. 1:14 1Cor. 15:23 2Tim. 2:7 1Peter 1:3
2. Baker company a rapture when the church is removed from the scene. 1Thess. 4:13–18 Philip. 3:20–21 1John 3:1–2
3. Charly company. Martyrs from the Tribulation and Dan. 12:13 Matt. 24:31 Rev. 20:4 and Israel.
4. Dog company. Millennial saints, and there are two sources: the survivors of the Tribulation who will go into the millennium and be the basis of the repopulation of the earth. There will be a great time for evangelization. Both groups will get their resurrection bodies, which will survive the destruction of the universe.

2nd Resurrection

1. Hell is prepared for the devil and his angels.
2. There is specifically a resurrection of damnation. John 5:29
3. The Old Testament distinguishes between the 1st and 2nd resurrections. Dan. 12:2 emphasizes the 2nd.
4. This occurs at the great white throne Rev. 20:12–19

We have *out from* which implies that there are dead who are left behind. If it was αἰπο there would be a complete resurrection. Genitive plural for nekros. The soul and the spirit leave the body. Up to this point, only Christ has been resurrection. The plan of God was designed in eternity past and it shifts gears at the point of resurrection. Grace was the concept, which existed long before we did. We meet grace at the cross when we believe in Jesus Christ. The plan of God at various points manifest the grace of God.

1Peter 1:3 **Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! According to his great mercy, He has caused us to be born again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,**

grace is multiplied by inheritance. Christ is the Son of God. It is inevitable that we will share the destiny of Christ. The destiny was designed for eternity past. He is in His resurrection body and Positionally we are in union with Christ. Since He is the Son of God and the heir of God the Father, and we share His sonship and heirship, so we must share his life, which is eternal life.

Κληρονομία is the acquiring of possessions and with reference to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled. Direction of the plan of God.

Doctrine of Inheritance

1. Christ is the heir of all things. We find all over the Bible certain things about inheritance. It is all pulled together from all over the Word of God. So we must have exegetical and categorical approaches. This way, when we run into the word inheritance, we
2. It is based on sonship. Gal. 3:26
3. Heirship is based upon the death of another. Christ died and Rom. 5:8 and we inherit.
4. Heirship to be permanent demands the life of God. Titus 3:7 you cannot be an heir of God without having His life?
5. Eph. 1:11 to share the destiny of Christ.
6. Is based upon a plan, the principle of election. It is not helter skelter. Heb. 9:15
7. The indwelling Holy Spirit is the down payment on the believer's inheritance. Eph. 1:14
8. Basis of eternal security and related to heaven forever. 1Peter 1:4–5 This tells us what our passage adds to what we know.

God's grace does not save us and then throw us overboard. We are in an inheritance forever. This is the reason for bringing up this doctrine.

Αφθαρτος = *not to be corrupted, spoiled, perishable*. Our inheritance is not destroyed by death. Death does not destroy, corrupt or remove our inheritance. Under eternal security, there is no sin that we can commit and lose out of God's plan. God cannot cancel out our relationship to Him, neither can the angels, neither can death. Nothing destroys our inheritance. As great as these things may be, none of these things can touch our inheritance. 1Cor. 15:50–52

μιοτος = *not garbage, filth, mud*. No sin and no activity of the sin nature which can destroy our inheritance. Some of us are trying too hard; we are a little too tense about this. We assume that we have committed the unpardonable sin. Once you believe in Jesus Christ, you cannot commit the unpardonable sin. Another reason you cannot commit that sin, is we live 2000 years too late. Then, a pharisee rejected Christ and attributed His miracles to Satan.

Αμαρνοτος = *not to rust out, not to decay*. It cannot fade or dry up or be destroyed by the elements. Our possessions like that cadillac will eventually corrode. We have a noncorrosive inheritance. There is an alpha privitive for each one. Can't be destroy by death, not by our sins and the elements cannot destroy these. Somehow, everyone has a front row orchestra seats.

Perfect passive participle of *τηρεω* = *to guard something which belongs to you*. We belong to God, and He guards us. Perfect tense, which means God does this forever. He will keep this inheritance forever in the sphere of heaven. Then we have *εις* again, and the 2nd time in this verse, and we end up being the object of this grace; we are the direction of God's plan and God's grace. You cannot worry or be disturbed or fall apart. All you can do is celebrate. *Bless you, brother* means nothing. It means to celebrate; it is not the clergy doing something special for us. It is us responding to God's plan. We have something to celebrate and you cannot celebrate and be worried at the same time. The plan of God once you have an edification complex is easy to handle. We are confused as a Christian baby. We celebrate when it rains and when the sun shines. We celebrate when things are great and things are going wrong. If you worry all the time, is that any way to live the Christian way of life? Here is God with a perfect plan and you can't lose but you are losing. How do you follow the game plan? And edification complex. We are the direction. Our inheritance cannot be destroyed by death; it cannot be destroyed by sin; it cannot be destroyed by time. This all adds up to the doctrine of eternal security.

Φυρεω = *to guard, to garrison a fortification, to concentrate troops at a strong point*. God has provided for us a strong point, a garrison; we will always have a guard.

1Peter 1:4 **to an inheritance that is imperishable, undefiled, and unfading, kept in heaven for you,**

by means of the power of God, which is that wall of fire from Zechariah. When did it begin? It occurred at the moment of faith. Again, we have the directional participle: *εις* and *επτοιμος* = *to be prepared*. God has provided what we will need to be with Him forever.

To be revealed is *αποκαλυπτω*; which word can be explained with isagogics. The parents got together and there was a dowry; I will take your daughter off your hands for so much money; and there would be a contract. There would be an agreement to pick up the daughter at a particular place. The father delivered the bride and the money into the chariot. Inside, the friends are celebrating; the bride's friends are outside waiting; when they arrive, they are to light up their lamps and escort them in singing. The bride had a veil over her face still. The virgins are the friends of the bride. The groom brings the bride in veiled; there are a houseful of guests and the first is to lift the veil of the bride for all to see, and he lifts up the veil, reveals her, and that means that they are married. Lifting the veil reveals the bride, and this is *αποκαλυπτω*. The groom won't do this until the last time. You want to present the bride as being as attractive as possible. The bride is the body of Christ. When we accept Christ, we enter into union with Him. The tribulational saints are the friends of the bride. When the body is completed, up goes the body and we are raptured. At this point, the bride is still not ready. There is still one thing; the bride has to release all of her human good, and that takes 7 years, which is gotten rid of by judgment; and it is all burned, wood, hay and stubble at the Judgment Seat of Christ. Then Christ returns with His bride, and He reveals His bride minus the sin nature and minus human good. Here, the bride looks her best. The demons are all punched by us. Quite a party, isn't it? The demons are removed and Satan is removed, and the bride has 1000 years of honeymoon. During this time, the church is the only one with resurrection bodies. That

is what is meant here. Aorist passive infinitive: point of time this action is received
1Thess. 3:14 Rev. 19:14 infinitive is God's purpose to reveal the bride in the last time.
The 2nd advent begins an epoch, and we find the word *χαιρος* = *time as an epoch*.

1Peter 1:5 **who by God's power are being guarded through faith for a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.**

In which is a relative pronoun referring to the 2nd advent when the bride is revealed; we rejoice in this future wedding. Generally they look forward to it. They anticipate. Some get very excited. If you don't have some of that, then forget it. Greatly rejoice is anticipation of this wedding. *Αναλλιαω* = *to celebrate again and again*. Present tense means it continues; middle voice means we benefit from this; indicative means the reality of the celebration.

Two adverbs: *ολιγον* = *a short period of time*. *Αρτι* = *now*. Present active participle of *δew*, if necessary, and it is necessary. *Λυπεω* = *to be in suffering*. Aorist tense for points of time when you suffer. All the points in which we suffer. Passive voice we receive the suffering. Circumstantial participle, we received a certain set of circumstances in this life.

Ev + locative *πηροσμος* = *adversities, calamities, pressures*. You will continue celebrating this marriage, but you will receive suffering in the sphere of many kinds of pressures

1Peter 1:6 **In this you rejoice, though now for a little while, if necessary, you have received suffering by various trials,**

Lesson #32 Suffering Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter 1:6 circa 9/29/69

We have studied the verse but not the categories yet. It often takes a build up of doctrines to get you to the primary and most important doctrine that we need to get to. English flag for many years was a banner with the cross of St. George on it. When each part of Great Britain was added into it, 3 flags were added together to make one flag. The doctrine of the soul. We need to know something about the breathing apparatus. Exhale from the left and right bank, and these are just a part of the edification complex. It is the basis of maturity and inner happiness in the life of the believer.

V. 6: grace is multiplied in suffering. All suffering is designed for blessing, even that for discipline. The suffering here is suffering for many types of suffering—soul, body, etc.

1Peter 1:6 **In this you rejoice, though now for a little while, if necessary, you have received suffering by various trials,**

Suffering

Some people are suffering because they are here; or they got the wrong pew. 3 or 4 are looking around to find the person that you wanted to sit next to. Be that as it may.....

1. General causes for suffering: if you spend your whole life looking over your shoulder because you have a guilt complex, you think that everything that comes along is discipline.
 - a. Loss of health. Some people are healthy and some are not. Some will never have a day free from pain and some have no idea what pain is.
 - b. Administration of justice. A national or more local entity protects the rights of many by punishing those who take from our rights. We must have common law, and there are penalties assessed for every kind of violation.
 - c. People suffering; there are nice people who may be mean to you and vice versa; hard to tell the white hats from the black hats. The classic remark, "I did not know that anyone from Berachah could be wrong." People in Berachah have sin natures just like anyone else. Gossip, warfare, violence, ostracism, violation of your privacy. There are courses in college in sensitivity. It is total subjectivity; the darkness of soul and the worst thing to happen to this country. You are suppose to spill your private life to those you are around. The Communists in the kremlin also break into their cells and go through a period of self-judgment. This is often a sign of scar tissue on the soul. These are as Satanic as anything else which has come along. The people who have done the most to preserve our freedom, and there is no sensitivity concept in the armed forces. The next census is going to be a real deal, and the things which they ask are an invasion of our privacy. Communists when they take over will go into Washington, press a button, and out will pop a list of those who are reactionary, and Thieme's will be right on top.
 - d. Privation.
 - e. Weather. We don't suffer in Houston. When people ask Bob about the tempertuare, he tells them it is 68 degrees all the time.
 - f. Loneliness, ostracism, boredom,
 - g. Mental suffering, which is usually caused by mental attitude sins which produce self-induced suffering. Jealousy, you punish yourself, as with vindictiveness and hatred. These are general causes.
2. Categories of suffering:
 - a. Suffering in time, which applies to the believer and the unbeliever. Unbelievers can develop scar tissue on the soul. 11 reasons why the believer suffers, to be covered later.
 - b. Suffering in eternity, which only applies to the unbeliever. Rev. 20:12–15 21:4 tells us the believer does not suffer. There will be no regrets in eternity. You may or may not have regrets in time; but none in eternity.
3. Premise of suffering for the believer, which will be all of the rest of the points—applied to believers only.
 - a. All suffering in the Christian life is designed for blessing. Phase I salvation, phase II life in time; phase III eternity. Suffering only includes phase II; no suffering for the believer elsewhere. However long you are a believer on this

earth, you can suffer. 1Peter 1:7–8 4:14 all suffering in our lives is designed for blessing.

- b. As members of the family of God, we are subject to discipline, which is not said to be blessing.
 - c. The exception is removed by the rebound technique. 1Cor. 11:31 1John 1:9 rebound is because we have committed a sin or sins. Divine discipline means we have committed sins. Rebound could make the suffering continue; the suffering might be diminished, and the suffering could be removed entirely.
 - d. Cursing is always turned to blessing by the grace of God (Rom. 8:28). God has to be consistent with His own character; He cannot change His justice or distort His justice. Christ went to the cross and satisfied the righteousness and justice of the Father.
4. This will help us to analyze our own life without talking about our suffering to others. There is a wife who will run around and complain to everyone she can talk to about her husband. The husband may notice that he is getting these mean looks from everyone. It takes two to tango and two to tangle. One of the great things is to keep your mouth shut when you are having trouble. So you can talk to God if you are having problems with someone.
5. 11 reasons for Christian suffering:
- a. When you suffer, all of your friends attribute it to you being out of line in some way. Psalm 38 there is discipline for the believer who is out of line. Heb. 12:6 when you hear of suffering in someone else's life, don't assume that it is discipline from God. That is a pleasant and relaxed way to be.
 - b. We also suffer to glorify God, which is a general and basic reason. Luke 15:20–21 Job 1–4 and suffering often reveals the edification complex of the soul. God is glorified as the edification complex is revealed in times of suffering.
 - c. To illustrate a point of doctrine or many principles of doctrine. The entirety of Hosea is him suffering in order to explain a point of doctrine.
 - d. To learn doctrine. To learn obedience. We suffer to learn obedience. Heb. 5:8 Philip. 2:8 military life teaches this way. It needs to be a reflex extension of your being. Close order drill; formations; blast of a whistle and a bellowing sergeant. All designed to get a reflex of obedience. In normal conditions, we can learn this so that it can be applied to abnormal times. Close order drill becomes suffering. Running with full packs is worse than Vince Lombardi's first 3 days of suffering. 1000 yard drills with a gun. Well-meaning mothers writing to Congress about how mean the army is to their boy. They are marched into swamps. We will go back to 17th century warfare and they will have no idea how to function. Warfare will go back to artillery on the ground. Sometimes people get killed in training. Better to die in training than for 1000's to die in combat. Better for this to be learned to begin with. We need universal military training. It is a tragedy that it must be learned this way. If you do not discipline yourself in school, then you will

fail out of college. There is a whole generation in college now who cannot sit down and study. When they lack self-discipline, they can't cut it. Then they drop the standards and throw in sensitivity courses. There is even afro-history and asian history. Confederate history is not good enough. Bob can tell the history of Africa in a sentence. They were in the stone age until the British empire hit them with law and order and the gospel. They were pulled out of the bush. But they are being exploited by Communism today and enslaved just as they were centuries ago. We have a whole set of high school kids in revolt today, who don't even know what revolt is. They have style and grooming revolt and freedom revolt. All they are doing is disrupting a principle and a system and they are getting ready to contribute to their own destruction. No bicycle racks in high school now; you might now be able to survive in high school now if you ride a bike. They don't know what it means to be deprived or hungry. Against what are they revolting? They don't know; they are being used. There are so many things in life which are not fun. They require self-discipline. Children? Are they fun? They were designed to be trainees; if you are catering to their love now, you are making a mistake. If you have children, you have a responsibility. You teach them that they have freedom and responsibility. With these freedoms, there must be responsibility. The halfback who is hit, he gets up and moves. That is self-discipline. Football helps a lot of people in life because of the self-discipline aspect of it. There was a time when the average population was involved in sports rather than just sitting on our butts and watch. Suffering is necessary to develop self-discipline, which is a vital part of the Christian way of life. Example of an athlete in shape does not suffer. The injuries go down when the men are in shape. Most injuries come when you are tired. Football is a precise game. When you get tired, that is where you get the injuries.

- e. Suffering is used to keep down pride. Pride is a mental attitude with which we can do without. If we think that we are helping God, we find out that we are not. 2Cor. 12:7-12
- f. Suffer to develop faith. 1Petrer 1:7-8
- g. To witness for Christ, to communicate the gospel to people. Corinthians. Some may be attracted to you on the basis of your stability in suffering.
- h. To demonstrate God's power, which is almost an extension. 2Cor. 11:24-33 12:7-10
- i. We suffer to manifest the production of the Holy Spirit. 2Cor. 4:8-11
- j. We suffer to help others in time of their suffering. 2Cor. 1:3-5
- k. We suffer under the law of indirect action and the law of interaction. Other believers get out of fellowship and it produces suffering in a group; suffering on a team or in a family. Children out of fellowship or parent out of fellowship. Because of the structure of life and the relationships in life, we suffer due to indirect action; someone else is out of line. We are on the same team, or same family, or whatever. Someone else causes you problems. 1Cor.. 12:12, 13, 26 You hit your finger with a hammer and you

don't say, "Ouch, it hurts in this little spot right here." 1Chron. 21 is about David getting out of line and causing a lot of suffering.

6. The Uniqueness of the sufferings of Jesus Christ.
 - a. 3 areas: suffering during the incarnation from the fallen angels. Wherever He was, demons were there to tempt Him.
 - b. He suffered pressures from mankind and persecuted by religious types.
 - c. The unique sufferings of the cross. 1Peter 2:24 3:18 Psalm 22 2Cor. 5:21 Isa. 53 He was slapped, spit on, punched, described as having the features of His face ruined to where He no longer looked human. Excruciating pain during the trials and the beatings and the first 3 hours on the cross (where his body pulled His points out of place). But all of the sins of the world were poured out on Him, and then He began to scream. He cried out, "My God, My God why have You forsaken Me?" Unique of uniqueness when it comes to suffering. Jesus Christ took all kinds of ordinary pain. He literally screamed when it came to taking on our sins. This cause Him to scream and scream and scream. There is nothing like it in this age or any age to come. Bobby is about to take a boy up by his ears and wipe that smirk off his face. It is a reflection upon his parents. Christ took our place and He was judged for us. We have eternal life by simple faith in Jesus Christ. There is only one response; believe in Jesus Christ and you are saved.
7. Grace in suffering: there is not suffering and no pressure too great for the plan of God. God knew all that we would face in phase II and He made perfect provision for us.
8. Only ini time can God demonstrate His love to the believer in suffering. 1Peter 4:14, 16 Rev. 21:4 believer in eternity will never suffer again. God loves us with a perfect love and He can never show us His love in suffering in eternity; but He permits periods of suffering in time for us. This is His only opportunity to do so in time. Disaster with rm/rw will make them stronger. This is why it is better to wait for the right person. You may find yourself disliking your opposite number. Disaster will blast you apart. In the courting period, it is nice to have at least one big disaster. Some men think that it is terrible to lose face in front of the gf or that you fail. In other words, disaster intensifies true love and destroys pseudo love. All it takes is a good disaster. Only in time can God demonstrate His love toward us is in phase II and in suffering. Don't be frightened or disturbed to have difficulty in your life.
9. 4 principles:
 - a. The multiplication of grace does not ignore suffering. Grace is designed for suffering as well as for blessing.
 - b. God's plan and God's provision is just as good in suffering as it is in prosperity.
 - c. There has never been a disaster, a suffering, a catastrophe too great for the plan of God.
 - d. God's plan and provision is greater than any circumstance in life. It is greater than we are, greater than our sins, failures and our successes. We

can be the greatest failure in the world and be in God's plan and come out as the greatest victor.

Lesson #33 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter 1:7 circa 10/6/69

In teaching out at U of H, Bob found out a lot of people did not understand rebound. It is essential that we review the basic tenets of rebound. Do not deliberately sin so that you can name that sin in order to get rid of the unknown sins. If you have unknown sins, then just wait it out until you commit a known sin. Homologeō means to cite a case, to name the sin; the sins which we name are actually judged on the cross. Our sins went to court on the cross. Prov. 1:23 this is the basis for being filled with the Spirit. Every believer begins in the top and bottom circle. You should confess a sin a second after committing it.

ἐπίγνωσις in the soul. We are priests, so we have the right to prepare ourselves for the study of the Word of God. In 2 Bible classes, Bob has had an open session on grace perspicacity, and he has decided that he is a bust or you students are a bust. Subjectivity seems to be the biggest problem. If it takes you 20 minutes to think about your life, you are not close to growing up. Bob did enjoy the questions at the Ladies' class. But the things which puzzle you seem to be based upon subjectivity. We are seeing a rise of subjectivity. It is a massive dose of subjectivity. No race of people has been vigorous and subjective at the same time. When our law was objective, we killed and hung criminals. People knew that committing a crime could be a big deal. However, things have changed since then. There is even subjectivity in football, and Bob really resents that.

Bob says to go invade North Viet Nam and go in to shoot everything in sight, and you sink everything in the harbors of Hai Phong, and then you look for someone to sign the peace treaty.

That introduces a purpose clause; δοκιμιον refers to that by which anything is tested and it means testing under pressure. This is used for a scrimmage. Putting them under game conditions. When you take young recruits out and put them under live ammo. You put someone under maximum pressure to test what they have learned. Γνωσις is cycled to the soul, it is believed, and then it becomes ἐπίγνωσις. ἐπίγνωσις must have testing.

Application to government, to social life; to everything in life. If you listen to tv, and have doctrine, you would not be taken in by what you see. There would be a reaction, and sponsors would withdraw money, and kooky shows would have not place to go.

Πιστις = *faith*. This is used for the operation of the faith rest technique. Faith rest, perspicacity by grace; a functional attitude first of all. Grace is God accomplishing everything because grace is God doing the work. Grace demands non-meritorious perception, which is pistis, which is a type of thinking where you accept without proof something as being true and valid which you cannot see or prove. All children have nothing but faith. Everything which is taught to a child is done by faith. You tell a child that

1+1=2 and he accepts it; and you tell him that England is a country, etc., and they accept it as true. It is non-meritorious and the basis for entering the plan of God.

The basis for the cross is divine good. We have positive volition toward the cross and believe in Jesus Christ. The gospel enters the left bank and enters into the nous. The natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit because he is a soulish man; the Holy Spirit gives him a frame of reference, so that we can react to the gospel. Faith, then is non-meritorious. Faith must be tested.

comparative adjective: πολουτιμοτερον = *much+of greater value; much more valuable*. It is compared to gold, which has a maximum value. However, gold perishes, though it is tested by fire. Δοκιμαζω = *to test for approval*. All suffering in the Christian life is designed for blessing. Cursing is turned to blessing by means of the rebound technique. This faith must be tested with extreme pressure, though it be tested by fire. Δια+genitive of fire. This maximum pressure is designed to develop faith, for the storage of doctrine in the human spirit. The faith involved in salvation is a little more than no faith at all. Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God. Faith is developed by transferring γνῶσις to ἐπίγνωσις. Faith must be nourished. The we have the filling of the Holy Spirit which will nourish faith.

To eat but not to exercise is detrimental. Eventually you get the charge of the elephant. Strengthening this. Getting to this point, and then there is heavy testing, which is through fire. Maximum pressure is put on you. This is like weight lifting. Repetitions of 10. Maximum pressure, which leads you to occupation with Christ. This is the other side of the edification complex. Faith becomes valuable and it must be developed.

Εἰς = *a result preposition phrase*. This results in commendation, glorification and value. The rapture of the church 1Thess. 4:13–18. If you have produced divine good, all of it is rewardable. The principle behind this is you have a sin nature, and these sins are judged at the cross. When someone comes to the cross, he is rejected. Faith rejects hug. All of the time he is in phase II, we produced divine good or human good. God cannot tolerate human good and it is outside the plan of God. The whole grace plan excludes human good. Since this is produced by the sin nature, God cannot stand it and human good will be thrown out.

How many of you have seen a bride walk in with a garbage truck which got poured on her, and has been in the stables and slaughterhouse; and no one would accept this. This is human good to God and God will not accept this. When you are out of fellowship, it does not count. The greatest deed in the world is nothing. It is less than nothing; it stinks. It is much better to have a few units of divine good rather than to see this whole bonfire of human good. Judgment Seat of Christ Rom. 14:10 and many other passages. The purpose of the Judgment Seat of Christ is to destroy the human good. Now the bride is ready. Every believer will go through this. The bride will be in a resurrection body, and this is sometimes called ultimate sanctification. A transfer of doctrine and it is functional in the faith rest technique. Every facet of our life is related to our faith. When we are outside of

the faith rest technique, we are worried, frightened; we are easily upset. Do not think the faith rest means to sit down and do nothing.

There is a time to sit still and a time to move; you can be sitting still and faith resting and sometimes you are moving and faith resting.

Grace and occupation with Christ. This faith begins to develop. Faith transfers what is in your mind. Any human viewpoint is distortion of doctrine by empiricism, like the tongues movement. That is the distortion of doctrine by empiricism.

Operation harem's ville is a distortion of a doctrine. Doctrine can be rationalized and empiricized, but it requires the faith process. One thing about the faith process is, it is a non-meritorious system. Filling of the Spirit is grace, the Spirit bears witness with our spirit, and we can see God. We may hear about the essence box, but once it is in our human spirit, it opens up our eyes. We can see His character. 3 persons have the identical essence. This will all add up to category #1 love. It will firm up with capacity for love as well. Faith will eliminate human viewpoint and legalism. Once we get there, we have arrived. Faith perceptive system is the greatest thing devised. 80 IQ believer can understand the realm of doctrine, and the genius unbeliever cannot grasp Bible doctrine.

You may reject something because your dear old pastor so and so told you that head belief was not good enough. There is a head and hear knowledge, if you want to make the heart the human spirit. All faith is thinking. Operation spiritual IQ.

The new birth gives us something else; it gives us the ability with every other believer to have a maximum amount of doctrine. It is all pisticism; faith.

Blind faith is a distortion. With ἐπίγνωσις in your soul, you can see the invisible. The cycling of Γνώσις into ἐπίγνωσις. There is nothing wrong with pisticism.

1Peter 1:7 **so that the tested genuineness of your faith--more precious than gold that perishes though it is tested by fire--may be discovered [or, found] to result in commendation, glory and value [or, praise and glory and honor] at the appearance of Jesus Christ.**

A panoramic view, which means to get the entire perspective. Aorist whom you have not seen, you keep on loving (ἀγαπᾶω). Toward people is no mental attitude sins. However, what does this mean toward God? No fear, no worry, no anxiety. This can also be had toward God. When you stop blaming God for everything and nothing, it is because you have an relaxed mental attitude toward God. Consistently, you have the filling of the Spirit. Rom. 5:5 1John 2:5 it comes out of the edification complex. Grace orientation, inner happiness, relaxed mental attitude, capacity to love, mastery of the details of life. A reflected glory toward God and the

God is invisible; the angelic conflict. All invisible. We keep on believing until we come up with that .

We rejoice, which is χαίρω but here we have αγαλιῶ = *to celebrate*. They may appear to be the same on the surface, but they are different. This celebration is with joy unspeakable. Χαρά is inner happiness. Notice joy unspeakable and unexpressible and indescribable. No one has your frame of reference or your spiritual IQ. You get it into your brain and no one can cycle doctrine.

Perfect passive participle of the last word, meaning having received glory. Perfect tense, but it is permanent. You receive it.

How do you love someone you have not seen?

1Peter 1:8 **Though you have not seen Him, you love him. Though you do not now see him, you believe in him and rejoice with inner happiness that is inexpressible and having received glory,**

grace is multiplied in the plan of God. Κομιζῶ = *to receive back what is promised and with interest*. Isa. 41:10 God promises us that we do not have to be afraid. He gives us what He promised and He will give back more than He promised. Matt. 21:22—all things that you ask in prayer, you get back. There is a promise in Job for protection in battle from Job 5. In fact, he makes you a hero in battle and you come out as a hero, instead of being a half dead pigeon. Maybe you just want the right one for you. You might have these specifics in mind, but God gives you much more. God gives us more than He promises us.

Receiving is a present middle participle. Τελος = *end, outcome, ultimate destiny*. If you have a wonderful time in phase II, what do you think phase III will be like? It will be much more than you could ever imagine. Receiving back with compound interest the ultimate destiny of your faith. The gospel becomes Γνώσις. By believing in Christ, you thought you were just getting eternal life and the forgiveness of sins. However, it will be komizô, which is going to be an over abundance of things.

You get these 36 things at salvation and no matter what you do, you will always have these things. Deliverance of souls. Σοεῖρα = *spiritual salvation; temporal deliverance*. Here, it is the deliverance of souls from a body of corruption to a body of incorruption.

1Peter 1:9 **obtaining the outcome of your faith, the deliverance [or, salvation] of your souls.**

concerning which salvation. Your soul is saved and your body is delivered; and your soul is put into a new body. Phase I is salvation and it is also used for phase III. Man is on one side and God is on the other. Man can get around, through, over or under. Position in Adam is replaced by position in Christ. That is deliverance, which is phase I. Barrier of sin and all that is in it. In phase III, all barriers of time are removed.

Then we are taken back to the Old Testament writers, which are the prophets. The unique prophet Moses, who had the office and gift of prophecy. He wrote the Torah. Then there are those with the office (Naviim) and those with the gift (Kethuvim).

The lack of a definite article in the Greek places great emphasis on the word.

1Peter 1:10 Concerning this salvation, the prophets who prophesied about the grace that was to be yours searched and inquired carefully,

The prophets of the Old Testament have a definite ministry to us. All that they have taught us under the ministry of the Holy Spirit is doctrine and all doctrine is grace and all doctrine is understood by grace and cycled in the soul by grace.

1Peter 1:11 inquiring what person or time the Spirit of Christ in them was indicating when he predicted the sufferings of Christ and the subsequent glories.

Lesson #34 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter 1:11 circa 10/13/69

There will be a question and answer period about perspicacity by grace after this class.

There is the word *searching*, ερευνᾶω which means *to trace, to explore, to investigate, to examine*. The writers of the New Testament spent their time exploring, investigating and examining. Today God does not reveal Himself through dreams, visions, or the teaching of angels. He did reveal Himself to the Old Testament communicators in these various ways.

Εἰς is used *with regards to what*. Investigating with regards to what [epoch] of time...

The Ministry of the Holy Spirit in the Age of Israel

This is the first age when God the Holy Spirit indwells every believer.

1. The Holy Spirit empowers a few believers to perform special jobs. These are like Joseph, who had to rule Egypt (Gen. 41:38); those who made the holy furniture and garments, the elders who assisted Moses (Num. 11:18 Joshua 27:18); certain judges Judges 3:10 6:34 11:29 13:25 14:6 15:14); various kings (1Sam. 10:9–10 16:13); Daniel (Dan. 4:8 5:11–14 6:3); Zech. 4:3; 1Peter 1:11 tells us that the Holy Spirit was involved in the lives of all the writers of Scripture. You will never find Christ in the Old Testament, as that is a Greek word.
2. Holy Spirit could be removed 1Sam. 16:14 Psalm 51 Pentecostal types sometimes pray about this a lot. We can grieve or quench the Spirit, but we cannot lose it.
3. In the Old Testament, believers could receive the Holy Spirit and receive Him. Elisha asked for Him. Luke 11:13. Luke 11:9–13: **And I tell you, ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, and the one who seeks finds, and to the one who knocks it will be opened. What father among you, if his son asks for a fish, will instead of a fish give him a serpent; or if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? If you then, who are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will the heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"**
The context clears up a lot of things. 3 kinds of food: bread, fish or an egg. *If* here is in the 1st class condition. Anyone can give you something and remind you of it

for the rest of your life. When you give, do not expect to get it back and do not expect anything in return. Never give with strings and never give to remind someone of it for the rest of their lives. Giving is an art. Jesus commanded them to ask in order to receive. Knocking is not getting the Spirit; knocking is getting the ministry of the Spirit. If you understand the difference between the Age of Israel and the Church Age, then this should be simple. There are 7 years to go in the Age of Israel. Bob supposes that the Holy Spirit is given to the 144, 000 Jewish evangelists, Moses and Elijah, and that others may have to ask. The Spirit indwells during the Millennium and the Church Age.

4. Just before the ascension, Jesus gave the Holy Spirit to the 11 disciples to sustain them. John 20:22. The doors are shut and Jesus comes and stands in their midst. John 20:19–23: **On the evening of that day, the first day of the week, the doors being locked where the disciples were for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood among them and said to them, "Peace be with you." When he had said this, he showed them his hands and his side. Then the disciples were glad when they saw the Lord. Jesus said to them again, "Peace be with you. As the Father has sent me, even so I am sending you." And when he had said this, he breathed on them and said to them, "Receive the Holy Spirit. If you forgive the sins of anyone, they are forgiven; if you withhold forgiveness from anyone, it is withheld."** Jesus tells them that they are being sent out to those whom they fear. This is still the dispensation of Israel, which will not be interrupted until the day of Pentecost.
5. Once the Church Age begins, every believer is indwelt by the Holy Spirit. John 14:16–1Cor. 17 3:16
6. In the Church Age, the believer cannot lose the indwelling of the Holy Spirit.
7. The Holy Spirit regenerated at the point of salvation; in the Church Age, the Holy Spirit accomplishes 5 things at the point of salvation and only 2 of them existed before.
 - a. Regeneration Titus 3:5 John 3:5 This was accomplished always in the Old and New Testaments. Regeneration is being born into the family of God; it means to be born again.
 - b. Indwelling. Rom. 8:9 1Cor. 6:19–20 Old Testament believers not indwelt by the Holy Spirit, and it is called enduement (empowering) in the Old Testament.
 - c. The baptism of the Spirit 1Cor. 12:15 Acts 1:5 beware of those who tell you to tarry and get the baptism.
 - d. The sealing ministry of the Holy Spirit. 2Cor. 1:22 Eph. 1:13 4:30 It will occur during the Tribulation as well. The 144, 000 are sealed. In our dispensation, it is associated with eternal security; in the Tribulation, it is divine protection for believers during the Tribulation.
 - e. God the Holy Spirit sovereignty and graciously bestows at least one spiritual gift on each believer. Most spiritual gift passages Some think that if they do not have a communication gift or an administrative gift, then they do not have one. However, in most cases, they do not need to have an actual gift. Not all gifts are named and defined. There are many other types.

Δελω = *to bring to light, to signify*. The Holy Spirit did a special ministry to the saints. An odd set of words here, because we are dealing with the Old Testament.

Προμαρτευομαι = *to declare something before hand, to predict*. Παθημα in the plural because Christ suffered for everyone. Whether they believed or not, Christ died for all sins.

The after this glories is the literal translation. This in itself is quite interesting; we will have a body exactly like His. There will be no ugly, fat resurrection bodies. Glory is the key.

1Peter 1:11 **inquiring what person or time the Spirit of Christ in them was brought to light [or, indicating] when He predicted the sufferings of Christ and the subsequent glories.**

We have the crucifixion, the resurrection and then the ascension. Nothing about the Church Age was revealed; it is blanked out from the Old Testament; there are illustrations which help us, but no Church Age doctrine. Noah and 7 people in the Ark is great for union with Christ, although that is not the teaching of this passage. There is no Church Age doctrine found in the Old Testament.

Unto whom refers to the human authors of the Old Testament. Αποκαλυπτω = *to reveal that which is hidden from the ultimate source*. The information was given in numerous ways. The very words of the original text are inspired by God. Without changing any of the writers vocabulary or personality, the Holy Spirit recorded God's thinking to man.

Purpose clause: *that not unto themselves*. The purpose is to all generations. *But to us, they continued to minister*. Διακονω = *to serve, to minister, to function before God*. Imperfect tense. Αναγγελω = *again to announce, to report back; to teach*.

The Holy Spirit is sent down from the ultimate source of heaven. Angels learn the outcome of the angelic conflict in the Bible. Επιθυμω = *to have an insatiable desire for something*. Παρακυπτω = *to bend down and to stare intently, to look down and concentrate*. This was used for John and Peter. Luke 24:12 intense interest is connoted by this word. According to Eph. 3:10, the angels learn from the church. 1Peter 1:11–12: **Investigating in reference to what time and manner of time the Spirit of Christ in them brought to light when He testified beforehand to the sufferings of Christ and the after this glories. Unto whom it was revealed that not unto themselves but unto us, they kept ministering the things which are now reported to us through them that have preached the gospel who have which things the angels have an insatiable desired to bend down and to concentrate on**

1Peter 1:12 **It was revealed to them that they were serving not themselves but you, in the things that have now been announced to you through those who preached the good news to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven, things into which angels desire to look.**

Jesus Christ said *peace unto you* when He stood in the midst of them. Because of Bible doctrine and because there is a present ministry, and everything is known and understood, because we have it in writing permanently.

A participle can be used in place of the imperative.

To run in the ancient world, you have to lift your robe up to run. Men who ran in the actual games ran naked. Women did not go to the games. They hauled up their skirts and tucked them into their belt. They were to remove anything that might impede their running. Gird up the loins is a picture of that, but this is in the mind. This isn't *vous*; this is *διανοια* = *to think through*; *doctrine in the mind being transferred and when it is cycled back up, it is dianoia*.

Ναφω = *to be non-intoxicated, to be well-balanced*. An inebriated person loses their senses of balance; they stagger down the street. It is a total loss of balance and a loss of equilibrium. This means to be stabilized, to be balanced, to be coordinated by what you think. Mental attitude sins make a person unstable; mental attitude sins are to your thinking as too much alcohol is to the body. Everyone has a brand, but they all come from pride, which is the basis for all instability in man. Pride causes a person to have self-pity. Jealousy is a mental attitude sin, but it stems from pride. Pride fires in the information. Bitterness is a mental attitude sin. When people are bitter, their pride is punctured. After you are bitter for a certain amount of time, then you move into operation revenge, bitterness; and you are a long ways from stability; and after revenge, you have a guilt reaction. All mental attitude sins and after a built reaction, it is all the other person's fault. Then you hate that person. It all began with pride and pride began the whole deal. It is instability which occurs because of pride which led you into this instability. Being sober here does not call for a booze sermon. When you are free from mental attitude sins, then you can use your relaxed mental attitude, your agape. Everything in the Christian life has a mental attitude attached to it. Giving is a mental attitude. Evil is something that you think as well. Capacity to love is a mental attitude. 2Tim. 1:7 we have not been given the spirit of fear, but of love and a sound mind. God does not sponsor sin or psychotics or neurotics. God has provided for even the wobbiest mind that ever lived; it is a grace package. Being constantly stabilized.

Hope here is confidence. Hope is not a weak desire for the future; the hope here is, "Hell, yes, we're going to make it." This guy in seminary who was going to get married after seminary. It never occurred to him that he would not get married. He talked about it all the time. There was confidence. That is the idea here. *Ελπίζω* = *confidence, future expectation*.

Επι is upon the grace. You are standing upon grace. Underneath is grace. What is out in the future? Grace. We can enjoy grace now; we can enjoy it in the future; it is grace.

General sense at the end of this as understanding Jesus Christ; this is not a reference to the II advent. We begin with a mental attitude; we prepare the mind for action. Have confidence to the end, to the grace which is to be brought unto us.

Anticipate out in the future; and anticipate in the near future. Satan challenges anyone who seriously wants an edification complex. Then Satan comes along and knocks our blocks over. There are a variety of attacks to keep a person from the edification complex.

Bob says that Satan tried to do anything to keep Christ from the cross. I don't think he is right here. I don't think that Satan recognized the cross or understood what was coming.

You cannot get doctrine except under the system provided by God; local church in privacy. You will not get an edification complex by coming occasionally; those who stay with it, get it, and the people who don't, don't.

1Peter 1:13 **Therefore, preparing your minds for action, and being [constantly] stabilized [or, balanced, with a sense of coordination, stability, sober-minded], set your confidence fully on the grace being brought [or, carried] to you in the sphere of the [or, by means of the] revelation [enlightenment] of Jesus Christ.**

Lesson #35 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter 1:7 circa 10/20/69

Bob has heard more bad news. Education program is continuing its downward trends; our colleges will be soon training revolutionaries, Communist sympathizers, etc. The press has taken another step in this trial. The military has one of the finest judicial systems in the world. The press gives one side of the story. Children in Vietnam; one child engaged a Sergeant in a conversation, and another child put the bomb in his pack and blew him in a hundred pieces. The women carry guns and ammo and shoot like men. We don't know anything about Asians. This must be the Me Lai massacre. When men, women and children do the fighting, you have to wipe them out. We are headed for the worst disaster that this nation has ever known. This Satanic, insidious blindness on the part of our leaders is fantastic. You will long for the day that you were free to go to Bible class. We started with, it doesn't matter what you believe, as long as you are sincere. Other countries have been here too, but they have survived because of the erection of edification complexes in the souls of enough believers.

Our press has brainwashed us. Some in Houston are dumb enough to believe in this massacre in Vietnam; but Communists will do this without a second thought.

For one year in Jerusalem, Isaiah taught doctrine every day; a maximum number of believers built up in their souls this fantastic edification complex and God delivered the Jews from the Assyrians.

Isa. 37:31–32: **And the surviving remnant of the house of Judah shall again take root downward [Bible doctrine in the soul] and bear fruit upward [divine production]. For out of Jerusalem shall go a remnant, and out of Mount Zion a band of survivors. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will do this.**

The only thing that is really fair is universal military training. A lottery is stupid (the draft lottery). We would have been overrun by the Communists 10 years ago. Major Gene

Wink. He was retiring. A grad of West Point class of '42. He went into the army air corps. They can manually fly a plane straight and level. Almost anyone can drop a wing, etc. Only the US has a strategic air command. We can refuel in air over the Atlantic, over North Africa, over the Arctic circle. This is what has kept the Communists off of our backs. About 1000 men who have this ability with Major Wink had. Thanks to Macnamara, we have no replacements for these men. We do not have the right type of material. These kinds of men do not pop up every day. We have no replacements for these people. This used to be a big factor, but it is not a big factor any more. There is no freedom of the press now; we are the dupes, the victims. We don't get facts. Most people jump on one said and that's it. There has never been anything more disgraceful than the press's handling of this massacre. Do they report the massacres in China, N Vietnam or S Vietnam. The trouble is, Satan is working overtime these days. He would like to head off the edification complex of the soul. Wisdom and knowledge are the pride of our... You either go in and fight to win or you forget it. We should have had about 225 dead and the Communists should have been in the millions.

Bob says a young man in the back can leave at anytime or he can shut his mouth. No manners, courtesy or poise. You don't have to agree even. There is nothing on the door which says, *agree or else*. You come of your own volition.

Out goes strategic air command and if they are not replaced with the edification complex, we have had it.

Bob took a poll yesterday and every bad driver was a male. Have I switched off my ignition, have I switched off my lights, my radio, ac and anything else? Have I set my brakes, am I in a legitimate parking area? Can I safely get out?

Rebound. Long prayer.

Obedient children in contrast with former ignorance. **As children of obedience,...** this is the answer to the problems of our country. Children indicates a relationship where we received 36 things. Teknon means that we are born again. Bible doctrine is turned into γνῶσις. Filling of the Holy Spirit makes doctrine comprehensible. It is transferred by faith to the human spirit where it becomes ἐπίγνωσις. The children of obedience are that remnant of Isa. 31. Wisdom and knowledge are the stability of our times. The things which counts for us as a person today is the only answer in our country's obvious decline. Negative volition toward doctrine builds up scar tissue on the right bank. Certain sins build up scar tissue on the left bank and on the right bank and these are of the utmost importance, as we get into subjectivity. The more subjectivity, the more of a breakdown that there is. Mental attitude sins and self-pity. The liberals are having a nervous breakdown because they cannot bring in the Millennium. The guilt reaction of the liberals. They have a guilt reaction. There is a plot to get us out of the war and they don't care how. They want this money can be used for more socialism programs. They may see a shack with a tv antenna with a couple of hungry looking people in it. It never occurs to them that these people have volition. This country is being run today so that a few liberals will be able to deal with their guilt complexes. The liberals play right into the hands of the Communists. Stalin said you

must knock out the authority of a country. Revolution of 1919 to show how it is done. Wipe out authority in the schools; discredit the military, the leaders and the police system. All types of authority are wiped out. The Communists had a hard system for ruling. Once all authority is destroyed, there are about 6 months of raping, stealing and killing, and then things are even worse when the party machine moves in and takes over.

Failure to prosecute criminals. We must be nice to criminals. That is one side. The other side is youth programs in our churches which do exactly the same thing. They don't want doctrine anymore; they want rah rah rah stuff. A fine young man murders his parents. Exposed to doctrine in Berea, but he rejected it. He took up psychology, and he is a very sweet boy. That is a combination for murder every time.

Bob knows how important it is to keep youth programs out of Berea.

There has never been a time when there has not been a lot of liberalism. A professor in 1937 told Bob that Christianity was the cause for the fall of the Roman Empire. He permitted a disagreement for awhile, and then got mad, closed down the class, and they argued for another hour or hour and a half. This was way back in '36 and things have gotten worse.

Without actual doctrinal training, how do you expect your children to do anything other than to go to college, join a fraternity, get drunk, and buy into all that is being taught there. Because of the failure of our national policy there will be an all-out war. Those who are + doctrine in the human spirit will make it; those with scar tissue will not make it. You want more keep them off the street activity. They need more doctrine. There is nothing that entertaining about doctrine presented categorically. There is a young life campaign; and at Berea, Wednesday nights, Bible teaching, with no special programs. These are the children of disobedience versus the children of obedience. The latter operate under grace; they erect an edification complex. They do not follow fashion.

Συσχεματίζω = *soon, with + to fashion*. The idea is, *to form a mold with; to form a pattern with; to form a pattern after*. Lusts is επιθυμία = *lust pattern of the soul; motivators under the cosmos system*. Unbeliever is motivated entirely under this system. Ev + locative of sphere of ἀγνοία = *by means of no understanding*.

Let's look at a lust of ignorance. There is nothing wrong with having fun. Trend of American people, in this article, is to have fun, to have more time to have fun, to make more money in less time so there is more time to have fun. From the earliest child to the adult, everyone is fun-conscious; and some are frustrated because they cannot have fun like they want to have. High school young people are being pressurized to think that certain things are fun and that you cannot go through high school without doing them. One of these things is sex; everyone talks about it. Legislature passed a law, a 14 y.o. girl and a 16 y.o. guy can live together and call themselves married. This guy that Bob runs with said that he was knocking on doors to get these gals back into school, and they weren't coming because they were pregnant. Now, how did they get that way? I walked into that one. But it was because of fun; this is what they did in order to have fun. Happiness goes

on beyond fun; it can be had day after day after day. Christ has perpetual happiness in His humanity. Sometimes you just have to take a good look at life and decide which way you are going to go. No one can have a lust for power and be happy. A slave to approbation lust means that you are in trouble. Have you ever had a marvelous time and it turned to be out to be miserable after? The difference is edification complex versus minus doctrine.

The suggestion *in your ignorance* is that if you were not ignorant, then you would be happy. Ignorance means scar tissue. God designed us to have perpetual happiness. God shares His happiness through the mind of Christ.

1Peter 1:14: **As obedient children, do not be conformed [or, formed according to a pattern] to the passions [lusts] of your former ignorance,...**

The key to this is *be you*. Γινομαι you are ordered to become holy. Aorist tense, and holy is in the plural. For most people, being miserable and not showing it is being holy. Do certain things so that you can trade out with God. Maybe God will put in a little bit of fun for you. What does it mean to be holy many times?

The word *holidays* is really *holy days*. The idea is, we can be holy today, tomorrow and the next day; and you put them together and you have *holies*. Holy is having an edification complex today, constantly being fed through the roots; and having one the next day as well. You can wear a crewcut and green socks and a red checkered tie and by holies. It isn't what you wear or the brand of asceticism that you practice, it is the edification complex of the soul which you feed up through the foundation.

The command to phase II sanctification. **According to the standards of the holy one...** Kata the preposition of norms and standard. **But according to the standard of the holy one who called you...** According to the standard of the holy one, which refers to God the Father; and it is because He was set apart billions of years ago because He had happiness. No change; still happy. God has designed it so that we can have happiness every day and we can get it through the grace system. Passive voice means we receive it; we become something which we were not before. I'll either have to blow my brains out or get something in them. *Holies* is just what has been a part of our life with the edification complex. Grace orientation, inner happiness, relaxed mental attitude, capacity to love categories 1-3, mastery of the details of life (you don't depend upon the details of life; but you enjoy them and you have a capacity for life). This is an imperative so it is a command. Once you have it, you have it. Passive voice, means the believer receives it. Imperative mood means that this is a command.

The final phrase *is in all manner of life*; the final word is αναστροφή, which is day by day.

1Peter 1:15 **...but as He who called you is holy, you also become holy [holies] in all your conduct [or, all manner of life],...**

Future active indicative. Moses told his people to build an edification complex, so here take the context of Leviticus, and they did not. The last stand. The Russians cannot have

a strategic air command because they do not have the type of pilots which we have. Men like these pilots have bought us time. Macnamara said we are in the missile age now and does not plan to keep this strategic air command going.

The only thing which will preserve our nation is to become holy. Hoti means *because, for*. The absence of the verb gives great emphasis. The essence of God contributes to the holiness of God. There never was a time when God wasn't happy or holy.

1Peter 1:16 **since it is written, "You shall be holy, for I am holy."**

Lesson #36 Exegesis/Prayer Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter 1:17–18 10/27/69

Bob instructs about turning into the slide, if you slide in your vehicle.

V. 17 means that you will pray at some time as a believer. The recipient is God the Father. All prayer should be directed toward God the Father. Pros = face to face with with a negative; and then partiality toward a person.

| The Meaning of this Adverb | |
|---|---|
| when you call upon God, He is impartial | |
| 1. | Prayer is the responsibility of the priesthood and privilege of grace. |
| 2. | God does not have any more respect for one believer over another. In prayer, it is a principle of grace. One believer can be as effective as any other believer. |
| 3. | Because of propitiation, all believers are under maximum love from God. |
| 4. | We as believers can please God, but we can never earn or deserve His respect. You do not earn God's respect. It is contrary to grace. |
| 5. | God has respect for God. Many doctrines are dependent upon this principle. God has respect for the work of God, but none for the work of man. |
| 6. | The Father has respect for the Son and we, as believers, are in union with the Son. Eph. 1:6 Neither legalism or human good impresses God. This is why anyone involved in penance makes no progress in the plan of God. We cannot work our way back into God's good graces. Everywhere you turn around, some believer is telling God he is sorry or that he will never do it again. |
| 7. | Prayer is not based upon human merit. This is why churches have all night prayer meetings and chain prayer meetings. They are trying to gain God's respect or approbation. |
| 8. | Therefore, every believer has the same potential in prayer. |
| 9. | However, experientially, every believer does not have the same success in prayer. |

The doctrine of prayer will help to clarify certain aspects.

| Prayer |
|---|
| People think that you get a better deal if you spend more time in prayer. |

1. There is a way to approach God and a way not to approach Him. You cannot play one God against another. Their favorite God is the Holy Spirit; another is another is Jesus. All prayer is to the Father. Eph. 3:14
2. Our approach to God the Father is through Christ the Son. We are a kingdom of priests and all of our prayer goes through Him. John 14:13–14 Eph. 3:14
3. 3 sources of prayer. Jesus Christ is true humanity as well as deity. Heb. 7:21 Jesus Christ prays to the Father. The Holy Spirit offers prayer. Rom. 8:26–27 Heb. 7:25 Believers also pray to God. There is nothing which says we ought to pray all night. Nothing spiritual about long prayers in a service. Prayer in a service is legitimate, but not for hours. Moody once stood up once and said, “While Brother so-and-so finishes his personal prayer, we will sing hymn #...” These kinds of people are generally very thoughtless types. Around a table, they don’t recognize that some people are hungry. If you are praying, don’t call upon a minister to do it; he may pray for 5 to 10 minutes. The purpose is to sanctify the food. Prayer should have a definite purpose; it is not to show off and it is not to show off. Some people pray like, in order to use the phone, they call up the phone company, speak to the president or Vice president in order to discuss the matter and to get permission. Some people have a normal voice and a sanctified voice for prayer. That some of these prayers get through impresses Bob. The beautiful thing about the spiritual life is the public prayer is about 1% of the spiritual life. Most should be private and silent. All sin is against God no matter who is hurt.
4. For prayer: Confession of sin; any unconfessed sins need to be dealt with, so that you can be filled with the Spirit. Then thanksgiving, since prayer is based upon grace. If you do not recognize what God has already done; how will you know what He will do? Eph. 5:20 1Thess. 5:18 Intercession is actually praying for others. Eph. 6:18 We ought to have a prayer list. Do not depend upon your memory. Petition Heb. 4:16 which is praying for your own needs.
5. There are certain promises given throughout the Bible connected with prayer. They are often connected to grace, and with the character of God.
 - a. Matt. 18:19 21:22 Mark 11:24 Psalm 116:1–2 Jer. 16:16 Much about prayer is found in Isaiah and in Jeremiah. Both deal with either the 4th or 5th cycles of discipline. People went to pray in times of national disaster. Matt. 7:7–8 John 15:7 Heb. 4:16 promises connected to principles of prayer.
 - b. Prayer must be offered by a believer priest. John 15:7 you don’t get the whole country to petition God. Only believers can. Prayer is actually a grace function.
 - c. Faith rest concept. Matt. 21:22 2 or more people; must comport with the faith rest principle. Doctrine in the human spirit, and prayer is exhale and exhale from ἐπίγνωσις. You cannot pray as an application from your mind. Prayer doctrine must be transferred to the human spirit and it is an exhale; a left-bank exhale toward God.
 - d. Since prayer is to God, it will follow His rules and not ours. According to the will of God. 1John 5:14 we do not call the shots or the rules for prayer. Will of God is accomplished through knowledge of doctrine. If you have

intellectual comprehension of doctrine, you will never know the will of God. You need to transfer it by faith.

- e. Prayer must be offered under the filling of the Holy Spirit. Eph. 6:15
 - f. Prayer cannot be answered if a believer is out of fellowship or carnal. Psalm 66:18
 - g. Prayer must comply with a pattern of grace. Eph. 4:16 We approach God on the basis of Jesus Christ.
 - h. Prayer is accompanied by thanksgiving because thanksgiving is grace re-orientation. 1Thess. 5:18 Rom. 8:28
6. Prayer not answered
- a. Not filled with the Spirit.
 - b. No doctrine in human spirit and no faith rest in exhale. Matt. 21:22
 - c. Mental attitude sins Psalm 66:18
 - d. Lust type selfishness James 4:2–4 James is a grace epistle all the way. Prayer indicates positive volition. Many ask for wisdom and suddenly, there is a tape recorder right there. You cannot get doctrine in the human spirit by praying for it. A double-souled man is unstable in all his ways. No doctrine transferred by faith. He tries to apply doctrine from the mind. Perfect gift has to do with the edification complex. Father of lights is the Father of the edification complex. The real Christmas is the reflected glory of the edification complex. What God provides does not change. Everyone is proud. You cannot be proud while listening to doctrine. Some people don't listen because they are too proud. You must receive with meekness the engrafted word. A lot of interesting things to start in with. Christmas time might be the toughest time of the year to get through to God. You get things you don't like and you are bitter for a month, and you have to pretend to like things that you don't.
 - e. Lack of obedience. 1John 3:22 obedience to the truth is the edification complex.
 - f. Non-compliance with specific and known divine will. 1John 5:14
 - g. Pride or self-righteousness.
 - h. Lack of compassion. Prov. 21:13
 - i. Lack of domestic tranquility 1Peter 3:7
7. Heb. 4:16 the principle of grace in prayer. Women obviously outlive the men; and the Bible speaks of the widows spending time in prayer.
- a. Prayer is a privilege of grace. You cannot come to God on the basis of human good or human merit.
 - b. Every believer approaches God on the basis of Jesus Christ. This is why people pray in Jesus' name.
 - c. The Father is satisfied with Christ but not respecter of persons where people are concerned.
 - d. God does not hear prayers because we are moral, self-effacing, religious, sincere.

- e. God hears our prayer based on the ministry of the Holy Spirit and on the basis of Jesus Christ. In the name of the Son and by means of the Holy Spirit.
8. 4 categories of petition:
- + - Desire is positive, and the petition is negative; we might pray for riches, but we really want happiness. You might get the wealth, but you are miserable with the wealth and you don't get the happiness.
 - + No, you don't get the money but you do get the happiness.
 - ++ Give us a king that we might be like other nations.
 - - Paul prayed 3 times for himself; Paul had an edification complex. That was all he needed with the thorns. Petition to take away the pain not answered, but God's grace is sufficient for him.
9. There are subject type prayers.
- Prayer for unknown believers or unbelievers. Col. 1:3–11
 - Prayer for unbelievers. Rom. 10:1
 - What is the Lord's prayer? The Lord's prayer is not found in Matt. 6, which is a model prayer for the disciples. John 17 is a real model prayer.
 - Prayers for known believers where you do not violate their privacy. Eph. 1:15–23 3:14–21

Judging here means to judge based on condemnation. We usually think of judge to mean evaluate or to condemn. God constantly evaluates. God evaluates each one's work individually. Ergon is the word for work. It means *profession, production, business, daily activity*. Occupation with Christ. End of the verse if you call on the Father. Aorist passive imperative of ἀναστρέφω = *to pass time, to spend time [in a good sense]*. spending time where you are not restless. Antithesis for boredom and restlessness. Only one way to do this is with an edification complex. James double minded man. Bored, restless and unstable. Anastrepho is the opposite of that.

Edification complex is the backbone of the soul. Here, it indicates that if you are bored or restless, you are unstable. The tendency is to revolt and to rebel. To ignore and to become bored. So anastrepho is a word for a relaxed person. It is the time when the believer is under gap. He receives doctrine through gap; imperative mood means we are to erect an edification complex. Occupation with Christ and effective prayer come from the edification complex. Χρονος = *a succession of events*. Past the time of your sojourning. Fear is used here for respect and amazement.

What pulls this verse together? Exhale out the left bank of the soul. Part of this is the 4th floor category #1 exhale of prayer is toward God. Both are for effectiveness.

1Peter 1:17 **And if you call on him as Father who judges [evaluates] impartially according to each one's deeds [production], [live by certain principles] conduct yourselves with fear/respect throughout the time of your exile [temporary residence] [in the sphere of occupation with Christ],**

the principle of redemption; doctrine of divine decrees.

Then we have because; this will tell us why we do this. Perfect active participle of οἶδα; residual doctrine in the human spirit. You know something in the human spirit. We are to live by occupation with Christ.

Money did not save you and success did not save you; and name dropping does not save you; and social life does not save you. Healthy people die young. Sex doesn't save, although gnostics got converts via sex. These are all details of the life. These are all corruptible things; they all come and they go. They are easy to lose.

Silver and gold refer to coins and they are in the instrumental case. Ek is also used.

αναστοφη means *way of life*. Ματαιος = *empty, vain, futile*. Details of life do not save and they are empty, futile. Money is futile. It cannot save you and it cannot make you happy. All of us have received money at some time, but it does not make you happy. Money success and pleasure and social life. These things may stimulate you for awhile. Friends. Where did we get this phrase "with friends like him, who needs enemies?" This goes on every Christmas. Loved ones, the most fighting you have ever done is with loved ones. Health, sex, materistic things. You can be happy with these things. Gap + edification complex allows you to be happy with or without these things. In other words, it is simple. There is nothing in life which can save you. They won't save and they don't have the ability to make you happy. Most of your happiness is anticipation and thinking about getting these things. There is always something over the horizon. The big push again Christmas can end up making us miserable. The Word of God tells us that these things are futile and empty. If you don't believe it, you have no doctrine. You might think, "Okay, try me God; experiment with me."

some of you ought to see your psychiatrist; you have not cracked a smile yet.

You have lights on a Christmas tree and decorations. God can do this because you have an edification complex. God can trust you with money. You have it, fine; you don't have it, fine. Details of life with an edification complex can be enjoyed to the maximum. Every day is Christmas. Lights are on the tree. Decorations are there. Bob can tell Christmas is coming because of the traffic. It is unbelievable.

Triple compound adjective πατροπαραδοτης = *given from the immediate source of the fathers*. The fathers passed down religion and legalism. If you get caught up in the religion of Christmas, you have had it. The Jews inherited a tradition of spirituality by works. The accepted these things even with a glorious heritage. These Jewish believers were fighting between religion and grace at this time. Doctrine sponsors and clarifies grace. There is a great inner conflict.

1Peter 1:18 for you know that you were ransomed from the futile ways inherited from your forefathers, not with perishable things such as silver or gold,

Lesson #37 Blood of Christ Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter 1:18 circa 11/3/69

Mattress Mac, Bobby and I are all the same age.

The life of the unbeliever is completely useless, yet often at Christmas time, you yearn for the leeks and garlic of Egypt; and Christmas has lost much of its meaning because of its emphasis and superficiality. As an unbeliever, we were leading useless lives; our opinions, thoughts and concepts are useless as unbelievers. There are some who are so close to communism, that is it a matter of semantics as to the difference.

For born-again Christians, we begin to think the Christian life is a drag and a bore and we become interested in the fun we once had and things which are touted as wonderful. Better to be hopeless than useless. A statement like this must be qualified in one sense; we get the idea that because the cosmos system is useless, that we should never have any fun. We will have the details of life as God provides them. At some time or another in life, we have been lonely and we have longed for the company of the opposite sex. Bob's football compatriots thought, *any port in the storm*. Better to have no one and better to have nothing than to have just anything on any condition. It is better to be lonely for x number of years and to end up with the rm or rw than to settle for anything less than that. The world says, *settle for anything*. When you get smart, your own company and your own loneliness is 1000% better than the company of a cheap substitute. Sex for the sake of gratification or to offset some of the loneliness, is not worth it. Bob just read a paper from a man getting his PhD in psychology, and he points out from the psychological viewpoint, that those who are sexually non-selective deprive themselves of the ability to enjoy sex. He just observes what Bible doctrine says without knowing any Bible doctrine. He demonstrates that promiscuity is wrong; but he does not know anything about scar tissue. The world says it is fine and says you should enjoy it at anytime; it is the impulse of the emotion coupled with scar tissue. They destroy the possibility and their capacity for happiness. Sex is designed to be wonderful and enjoyable, but only with the right person. A psychologist, just by being smart, can come to essentially the same conclusions. Having more time for fun and pleasure means that people often enjoy it less. Some companies try to help people with their leisure time and their off time. One phrase describes it perfectly: from your useless manner of life. The greatest relief in the world is to walk out on something which is useless. You reach the place where you just do not give a damn. Doctrine will give you sophistication that you desperately need. There is no plan for stupidity in the Christian life. Bob has never met someone who wants to be a sucker, but he has seen a bunch of them. They keep going back to a woman who does not care for them. If you go back to the cosmos after being saved, you are thrice more a sucker than they.

Living it up in some nightclub is not worldliness; that might even be holy. Worldliness is scar tissue on the soul; sucking human viewpoint into the soul. People think right is wrong and vice versa. People think you win a war by pulling your troops out of the way. When a man like Milton Eisenhower says we need to get rid of guns and that we need to give billions of dollars to odd ball agencies. People swallow this stuff and they believe it. Some think that if we pull troops out of a country, then the Communists will negotiate with us.

We can see what people cannot see. **Stand fast in the freedom with which Christ made you free.** Edification complex structure is what you need.

1Peter 1:18 **for you know that you were ransomed from the perishable things [silver coins, gold coins] inherited from your forefathers, not with perishable things such as silver or gold,**

A conjunction o contrast. I want to pass on something to my children; and the Jews passed down legalism and religion. People call you precious; it gives you the shivers if someone calls you precious. Τιμιος = *costly, of great price, most as valuable.*

Literal human blood on the one hand,... About 500 years of great German scholarship. P. 22 of the Arndt of Gingrich haima refers to literal blood, but it also refers to blood and life as an expiatory sacrifice. The last time Bob taght this, he caught all kinds of hell. The blood of Christ is not literal blood. The libeals and conservatives are messed up on the blood and only Berachah Church will have it right. Dr. Walvord had lunch with Bob and they discussed it. He said it is probably correct.

"It's the blood that saves; the blood. Bob will cut through the greatest area of misunderstanding in the Bible. The worst thing at all is all these weird ideas. Like Jesus saing, "Don't touch me" because his blood had not yet been carried to heaven. Forget about your background prejudice and the fountain from Immanuel's veins, and it is 100% blasphemous. We are not saved by the literal blood drawn from our Lord's veins. There is nothing beneficial in being sincere and naive. Being sincere does not impress God at all. Being naive. We first get rid of *precious*. The word is *most valuable*.

You might as well smile all of you before we get started. Almost everyone made it that time.

The Blood of Christ

1. Blood is the seat of animal life. Lev. 17:10–14 you won't believe this so you might as well turn to it. Ish is the word for man used here. Lev. 17:10–14: **"If any one of the house of Israel or of the strangers who sojourn among them eats any blood, I will set my face against that person who eats blood and will cut him off from among his people. For the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it for you on the altar to make atonement for your souls, for it is the blood that makes atonement by the life. Therefore I have said to the people of Israel, No person among you shall eat blood, neither shall any stranger who sojourns among you eat blood. "Any one also of the people of Israel, or of the strangers who sojourn among them, who takes in hunting any beast or bird that may be eaten shall pour out its blood and cover it with earth. For the life of every creature is its blood: its blood is its life. Therefore I have said to the people of Israel, You shall not eat the blood of any creature, for the life of every creature is its blood. Whoever eats it shall be cut off. When you kill a large buck, you cut his carated and other veins or vessels. Bob's had great and bad venison, and the difference is the blood. Animal blood to drink is verboten. The life of the flesh is in the blood, and we are speaking of animals. Horns on the**

altar to tie down the animal. We'll make this a lamb. The blood is inside the animal because the animal is still alive. The life of the man is in the soul. When the soul leaves the body, we are dead. The EEG tells us if a person is alive or not. The person puts his hand on the head of the animal and he opens his mouth and speaks his sins, which transfer the sins from himself to the animal. Now the animal now has the sins. The sins were poured out on the animal. The priest cuts the throat of the animal. The priest severs the carotid and the blood pumps out the blood, and the animal dies from the loss of blood. Someone asked if their dog went to heaven, and Bob said no, and they never came back except one time for something in Revelation. The animal dies physically and the animal has a physical death bearing sins. The blood is the seat of animal life. He will pour out the blood thereof and cover it with dust, for it is the life of all flesh.

2. Animal blood was used in the Old Testament to represent the spiritual death of Christ on the cross. Lev. 1–3 Christ died twice on the cross. The animal dies physically and it represents the spiritual death of Christ. Our sins were poured out on Christ and He cried out, "My God My God, why have You forsaken Me?" Christ of His own volition dismissed His spirit. He dismissed His Spirit because His work was finished. He did not bleed to death. The Roman soldier saw him at sundown and plunged the sword into his side and out came serum and blood. Eventually all the blood will turn to a substance which looks like serum. The physical death of the animal is analogous to the physical death of Christ. It is a representative analogy. In this analogy, physical death of the animal represents the spiritual death of Christ. Col 1:20 Heb. 10:19 13:20 1Peter 1:2 When Christ dies for us, it was a spiritual death. Jesus died because His work was finished, and that was His physical death. His spiritual death is what He died for us.
3. The doctrine of redemption was communicated by means of animal sacrifices in the Old Testament. Heb. 9:22 without the shedding of blood there is not remission
4. Christ did not die on the cross by bleeding to death. Luke 23:46 Matt. 27:50 He dismissed His spirit. John 19:33–34 the blood was still in His body after His death.
5. The blood of Christ is part of a representative analogy between the physical death of animals in the Old Testament and the spiritual death of Jesus Christ. 1Peter 2:24 2Cor. 5:21
6. The blood of Christ portrays 4 doctrines of soteriology. Redemption 1Peter 1:18–19 justification Rom. 5:9 sanctification Heb. 13:12 Expiation Rev. 1:5
7. Blood of Christ is the basis of the rebound technique. 1John 1:7, 9 Lev. 4–5
8. The physical death of the animal and the spiritual death of Christ. The most valuable blood of Christ, as a lamb without spot and blemish. Hopeless, helpless and stupid lambs. Jesus John 1:29, 36 is compared to a lamb, and He fulfilled every animal sacrifice. All of these were used to portray substitutionary atonement. The lambs sacrificed pointed to our Lord dying on the cross for our sins.

Ἀνομος = *blameless*. Our Lord was born without an old sin nature because of his birth. The progeny, male or female, possess the sin nature, but it is passed down only through the male. If a person is born of a virgin where no male copulation is involved, then that person is born without a sin nature. The virgin Mary had a sin nature; but Christ was born

without one. He was virgin born and minus the sin nature. That is the first reason that Christ is blameless, which is parallel to being without blemish or spot. One has to do with his life without personal sin and the other without a sin nature.

Impeccability

1. Christ did not have an old sin nature blameless and he did not commit an act of personal sin Heb. 4:15
2. Jesus Christ was tempted in the area of His humanity. Heb. 4:15 Matt. 4:2–11
3. Adam in innocence and Christ both had to be tempted from the outside. Both were born/created without a sin nature.
4. All temptations came to Christ's human nature; which was temptable. His divine nature cannot be tempted. The human nature is temptable; His divine nature is not.
5. Christ resisted the greatest of all temptations when He faced the cross. These involved volitional tests as with the first Adam. Adam was tempted to go to the tree and he went; Jesus was tempted not to go to the tree, and He went. This was not an apple tree. It was forbidden fruit and it was a test of volition. After his wife partook, he went negative as well. He was tempted to go to the tree and he succumbed. Jesus was tempted not to go to the tree. "If it be Your will, let this cup pass from Me." The one who failed got us into it, and the one who succeeded got us out of it.
6. In hypostatic union, Christ is not able to sin and able not to sin.

1Peter 1:19 **but with the most valuable blood of Christ, like that of a lamb without blemish or spot.**

Herman has been waiting for v. 20. Jesus Christ in His hypostatic union was foreordained. Προγινωσκω = *to know before, to know in advance*. Perfect passive participle billions of years before man existed, Christ was known as to be the focal point of history.

6 Principles

1. Eternal plan was required, which demands eternal life.
2. Plan was all-comprehensive. No confusion or breakdown in the divine plan. Everything was anticipated at one time.
3. Plan was perfect; God is perfect and His plan is perfect. If man can do anything in this plan, then the plan is flawed.
4. The plan is unchangeable. No event in angelic or human history has ever changed the plan of God. God knew in eternity past every decision of every person and angel and what they would do when and He tailored His plan to cover for this. Homosapien has been in existence for several thousand years with an astronomical number of decisions. Now, if you put these all into a computer to determine the order of events, the computer would collapse. It would be too much.
5. The plan of God is certain and it will move to its proper conclusion, which was objectively designed for his glory and His satisfaction.

6. The plan of God is efficacious. God does not tamper with free will. Under omniscience, God knows every decision and has prepared for every different choice.

Doctrine of Divine Decrees

1. The decree of God is the sum total of His plan for the human race.
2. Eph. 1:4–6 thepeg centers on Jesus Christ as Savior.
3. God's plan is so designed to include all events and actions related to their causes and their conditions as an indivisible system, every link being part of the integrity of the whole. .
4. Entrance into the plan of God is based upon the principle of grace whereby the sovereignty of God and the free will of man meet in a way which is compatible with grace. Eph. 2:8–9
5. Without interfering with human volition in any way, God has designed a plan which is so perfect and so fantastic, that it includes cause and effect, directive, provision, preservation and function for all believers. Directives are the doctrinal principles contained in the Word of God.
6. Under the plan of God, God the Father has decreed to do some things directly, some through agencies like Israel and the church, and some through individuals. Therefore, there are primary, secondary and tertiary functions within the plan of God. But these all constitute one great, all comprehensive plan, perfect, eternal, unchangeable, without loss of integrity.
7. The plan of God is consistent with the existence of human freedom. Without human volition, Jesus could not go to the cross; and we could not choose to believe in Jesus Christ. Arminianism and Calvinism are both wrong; they are both weak. God does limit or coerce human freedom [with respect to the gospel?]. We should distinguish between what God causes (like the cross) and what He permits (sin). God permits human volition to function, and therefore, Adam sinned. God is not the author of sin; human volition is the author of sin. God's volition goes into action to solve the sin problem by the cross. God permits sin but causes the cross.

1Peter 1:20 He was foreknown before the foundation of the world but was made manifest in the last times for your sake,

Lesson #38 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter 1:20 circa 11/10/69

We stopped with this verse and we will resume with this verse.

A bottle sent to Bob, and it read, Adelophos, Bob, Boi thêêtê, signed Paul. Bob suggests some fixes on the Greek. It means, Brother Bob, y'all help, signed Paul.

Relative pronoun and foreordained in the perfect passive participle of προγινωσκω = *to know beforehand*. It actually refers to the doctrine of divine decrees. Christ received

foreknowledge based upon the foreknowledge of the Father. There were 6 points in connection with the plan of God

plan of God

1. Plan of God is eternal and it is of greater antiquity than any plan put together later.
2. It is comprehensive. Everything is anticipated at one time.
3. It is perfect and His plan is perfect.
4. It is unchangeable; no event in angelic history can alter it. There are billions of quadrillion of decisions which have been made by every person who has ever lived, and every one of these decisions has been programmed from eternity past. God knew about everything and it was completely understood. He knew how every free will would jump at any point in time. God knew that we would make certain decisions and that we would have certain attitudes, and God allows us our free will and our sins and He does not coerce. He even provided discipline in eternity past. People will coerce us and bully us and put the pressure on us, but God allows us complete and total freedom. He allows our volition to function. Whatever is called for, God has provided for that in eternity past. Even before man existed, God took into account of all these incredible decisions and you begin to appreciate all that God is. The decrees are perfect and unchangeable.
5. The plan of God is certain and it will move toward its proper conclusion. Objectivity is God's plan.
6. God's plan is efficacious and has determined all that ever was or will be. Omniscience takes into account every free will. This does not tamper with free will. Free will can operate and be free and God knows it ahead of time; and the free will is not affected.

A smart football player knows what other players are going to do. They could watch the legs of a quarterback and be able to figure out what the play was going to be. Somehow, people understand this, but that God knows everything bothers them. "If God knew in advance, then why did He let me?" He lets us because we have free will and He allows it.

The Doctrine of Divine Decrees

The word is *foreknow* rather than *foreordain* (προορίζω).

1. The divine decrees are the sum total of God's plan for the human race.
2. Plan of God centers around the person of Jesus Christ. Eph. 1:4–6
3. Entry into the plan of God is based upon the principle of grace where the sovereignty of God and the free will of man meet at the cross.
4. God's plan is so designed so as to include all events and actions as an indivisible system, every link being a part of the whole.
5. Without interfering with human volition in any way, God's plan includes cause and effective, directive, preservation, and function for all believers.

6. Under the plan of God, God has decreed to do some things directly, some through agencies, and some through individuals. There are primary, secondary and tertiary functions; perfect without loss of integrity.
7. Plan of God is consistent with human freedom. God does not limit or coerce human volition. Distinguish between what God causes, the sin, and what He allows, sin. Man's volition is the author of sin in the human race.

Grace is older than legalism and older than man's plans and older than man's ability and ideas. Sin and evil and all that is rotten in the cosmos is eventually adopted by some segment in the human race. Christ was foreordained and foreknown before the universe existed. He went by His own volition. He agreed to go. The manifestation of His willingness to go is found in v. 20.

Aorist passive participle of φανερω point of time when Christ came into the world. The time when Christ was born and declared His willingness to go to the cross; when He died, rose, ascended; all of this is wrapped up into one point of time. Passive voice means that He received this as the work of the plan of the Father.

In these last times is in these latest of times. This refers to the latest moments of the dispensation of Israel, which was interrupted by the death, burial and resurrection of Christ. The Church Age interrupts the Age of Israel. The conclusion of the Age of Israel is the regathering of the Jews, who are scattered under the 5th cycle of discipline.

The hope that the rapture is right around the corner existed in Apostolic times. People are always setting dates, but no man knows the day or the hour. All prophecy has been fulfilled in order for the rapture to occur. If God wanted us to know, He would have told us in Scripture. God does not vocally speak to people today; He speaks only through His Word. The last time God spoke to anyone, it was John writing Revelation. If you hear voices, then you have some problems.

The last events which have occurred historically in the Jewish Age. The cross, the resurrection, the ascension and the session. These events are *because of you all*.

1Peter 1:20 **who, having been foreknown before the foundation of the world but was made manifest in these latest of times for your sake,**

Now δια + the genitive, which means *through Him*. Accusative plural of πιστος. All who are saved are saved through Christ and we are believers through Him. Εις is a directional preposition. The direction of our faith is God. The gospel comes into the mind, and the Holy Spirit makes it comprehensible. You believe in Jesus Christ and the exhale is toward God. From thereon in, you receive doctrine, which is transferred to the human Spirit by means of faith. Inhale faith and exhale faith are always directed toward God.

So believers toward God or in God. This is what starts the intensification going, when God raises Jesus from the dead. Christ is no longer a target and He can no longer be a target, so the only targets are believers in the Church Age. Every believer is in full time Christian service. We are targets now.

We operate under a specific faith. This takes doctrine and it is exhaled toward God and toward mankind. *Hope* has come some sort of a panty-waist word. When Bob asked another guy are you going to heaven, he said, "Damn right I am." That is hope; that is confidence.

1Peter 1:21 **who through Him [are] believers in God, Who raised Him from the dead and gave Him glory, so that your faith and confidence are [continually] in God.**

The phrase begins with *having purified*. Perfect tense and the rebound technique. The filling of the Holy Spirit being necessary for the function of gap. The soul must be purified for gap to function.

Ψυχη = soul

1. In mankind, the real person is his soul. What you are thinking is the real you. You are temporarily occupying this body. The human body is a temporary house for the residency of the soul while on earth. 2Cor. 5:1–5
2. Essence of the soul. Self-consciousness, mentality, volition, emotion, conscience (norms and standards), old sin nature (acquired by man but not a part of the original package). Sin nature is the source of all sin thereafter. The original sin came from the volition of the man and the woman. Since then, all sin involves volition, but comes from the sin nature. We are born spiritually dead. There is a lot of difference from acquiring it and having it to being with.
3. The soul has lungs for breathing in and out. There is a pair of appetures at each part of the soul, one toward man and one toward God.
4. Heb. 4:12 soul is not the same as the spirit. The original man was trichotomus. He had the breath of lives breathed into him. The soul was designed for the functions of man and the spirit for our relationship with God. When man sinned, he died spiritually, so he had to hide from God, being spiritually dead. Later, when man accepted Christ, his spirit was reactivated. He went from innocence and trichotomy to spiritual death dichotomy and back to trichotomy. Adam was born again. We have to be born again but Adam was not born but created. So he is not said to be born again.
5. Only the soul, not the body, was made in the image of God. Gen. 1:26–27 2:7 the essence of the soul has shadow characteristics of God. Sovereignty and volition, omniscience and mentality, God has total consciousness and man has self-conscious.
6. Only the soul can be saved at the point of salvation. The body is not said to be saved. Mark –8:3637 1Peter 1:9

7. The soul must be saved because of the presence of spiritual death in the form of the old sin nature. Therefore, the soul must be saved. Rom. 5:12 Eph. 2:1 the exception is Jesus Christ. This is why the Bible says "The soul that sins will die."
8. The soul is the place of knowledge; prov. 19:2 infiltration of Satan and Satanic doctrine.
9. Soul is the battleground for phase II. Psalm 143.
10. The soul is the arena of mental attitude sins. Zech.11:8 Joel
11. Because of scar tissue, the soul is the seat of misery. Psalm 106:15 119:81
12. The soul is the arena of capacity for love. 1Sam. 18:1 1Peter 1:22
13. Physical death is the departure of the soul from the body. 2Cor. 5:8 Psalm 16:10 your heart might even beat for awhile. But when the soul, is gone, you are too. EEG is the death for death; not EKG.

Instrumental of hupakoie which means *obedience from positive volition toward a principle*. Alethea is doctrine in categorical form. You can only apply doctrine from the human spirit. Your obedience to alethea is getting doctrine from the Bible into the human spirit.

The final principle of obedience. Doctrine is taken into the mind where it becomes γνῶσις and it is transferred into the human spirit where it becomes ἐπίγνωσις. When the edification complex is built, we have the reflected glory of God. Your final obedience is the erection of the edification complex. You are either building scar tissue or you are building the edification complex. You can be active in a program, but if you do not have an edification complex, then it does not mean a thing. Anytime you operate under another plan, you are getting your own glory into it. Unto is the directional pronoun εἰς which can also be a result.

Ἀνυποκριτός = *genuine love, a love free from hypocrisy*. Some may smile and strap it on you, but you know it is as phoney as can be. . you will run into people like that and you are a sucker if you believe it. What is a genuine love? A genuine love is a stabilized love. It is a love launched from something more stable than we are. To be a salesman, you need to be phoney. You will get along much better if you can be phoney in some areas. Love, the right kind of love, has to be stronger than we are; it must have a storage base, e.g., the edification complex. The love of the brothers is one word. Philadelphia. Just flying into their gives him the creeps. Only with the edification complex do you have genuine love for the brothers. If you have a bonafide soul, then there are times when you won't want to hang out with the brothers. It is instinctive in survival. At some time, you strap it on someone. You would be dead if you were honest with everyone. A genuine love for the brothers must come from a greater place than ourselves.

Some think, if a member of the body of Christ is unattractive, then why love them? That is superficial of course. This has to start with a specialized love, and ἀγάπη is a mental attitude love. You do not start out loving the brothers because you feel good or you have had a couple. It is no rosy glow, it is no stimulation; it comes from something greater than we are. The 3rd floor of the edification complex is a relaxed mental attitude. An ἀγάπη love is a mental attitude love. Gal. 5:22 1John 2:5 one another of the same kind. Ἐκ =

out from. The word *pure* is an adverb εκτενος which means *fervently, intensely*. Love is a concentration; love one another intensely. Love and hate are concentrations. All mental attitude sins are excluded. If you hate someone, it includes all the mental attitude sins. We are only commanded αγαπαω but the objective if φιλεω.

1Peter 1:22 **Having purified your souls by your obedience to the truth with the result of a genuine brotherly love, love one another earnestly from a pure heart,**

Edification complex of the Soul

1. The edification complex is developed through the daily function of GAP. It means having a human spirit and the filling of the Holy Spirit.
2. Taken from οικος which is a structure of a house and δεμω which means to build. The first work is οικοδομη, which means *the act of building an edification complex in the soul*. Οικοδομια is the result of an edification structure, e.g., philadelphia. Οικοδομος is the contractor, Who is God the Holy Spirit, in this case.
3. Biblical uses of edification:
 - a. Erecting an edification complex emphasized in Eph. 4:12, pastor-teacher communicates the doctrine upon which it is erected. 4:16
 - b. When a large number of believers have this, you have a marvelous environment.
 - c. Contrast between the gift of tongues and developing an edification complex. Warming the Jews of the coming of the 5th cycle from 40–70 A.D. Perhaps there was an overlap of dispensations? That messes up the time line, however. Speaking in tongues is nothing and building an edification complex is everything. Tongues is Satanic and one of the most monstrous evils which has come into existence.
 - d. Human knowledge puffs up but doctrine building an edification complex edifies. Human IQ can be the source of pride; spiritual IQ is not.
 - e. Communication gifts are designed for the edification of the believer. 2Cor. 10:8 13:10
4. Synonyms for the edification complex:
 - a. Οιδα, επιγνωσις Christ formed in you
 - b. Light Psalm 119:130 Eph. 5:8–9
 - c. Imitators of God Eph. 5:1
 - d. Image and glory of God
 - e. Obedience to the truth, results in an edification complex.
 - f. Christ at home in your hearts.
 - g. The fullness of God. Eph. 3:19
 - h. The new man.
5. The first prerequisite is to spend a lot of time in the filling of the Spirit.
6. The 2nd prerequisite is the daily inhale of doctrine.

7. Essence of the edification complex. Grace orientation, inner happiness or joy; relaxed mental attitude or ἀγαπή love; capacity to love all categories; mastery of the details of life.
8. Christ sets the pattern for the edification complex. Christ had one, being full of grace and truth. He grew in wisdom.
9. Accelerated construction of the edification complex depends upon the development of faith-patience.

1Peter 1:23 **since you have been born again, not of perishable seed but of imperishable, through the living and abiding word of God;**

Lesson #39 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Peter 1:23 circa 12/15/69

1Peter 1 is the first stop tonite. For those who are having exams this week, cheer up, soon the week will be over. Date changed here.

God has never done a sorry job on anyone.

αναγεννω perfect passive participle of *to be born again/from above*. Titus 3:5 John 3:5 this is one of several descriptive terms about what happens at the point of salvation. Permanent results; born again at a point of time which continues. God does not do a sorry job on anyone. Our faith is non-meritorious and God's plan is perfect. A perfect, permanent salvation. Two types of believers think they can lose their salvation: those who are stupid who think they can lose salvation by committing a particular sin; or a very proud person who thinks that they can commit a series of sins which are greater than the plan of God. You are not that great of a sinner. The proudest people Bob has known are those who think they can lose their salvation. Proud, stupid or both. Almost every cult with any concept of salvation and that you can lose that salvation, is blasphemous there and everywhere else. The participle recognizes a divine law which will always be in operation.

Εκ φθαρτος = *out from perishable (subject to decay)*. Then we have *seed*, which is σπορος. **Not out from perishable seed**. Αφθαρτος = *imperishable*. The seed is the Word of God. Δια + the genitive of λογος, which refers to the Word of God. Born of water and of the Spirit, which phrase has been misunderstood like nobody's business. Jesus was explaining to Nicodemus, who was a pharisee. Being very religious means he is very superstitious. This guy is so dumb, that he asks, "Do you enter into your mother's womb again?" How do you explain spiritual to such a person? Water was used for ritual. The brazen laver. He would then understand that spirit refers to spiritual. There is no water baptism, which is brought out in our passage here.

1Peter 1:23 **since you have been born again, not out from perishable seed but from imperishable, through the living and abiding word of God;**

Peter is going to document this in Isa. to his famous ministry in 700 B.C. Isaiah taught Bible class every day, and a maximum number of edification complexes were built in a year, and the city was delivered from an hopeless situation. They were delivered from Sennacherib.

When Sennacherib's invasion was imminent, God wanted Isaiah to emphasize certain things, like Bible doctrine. Moses taught for 40 years to the Jews with a pretty weak response; but Isaiah's ministry was quite successful. Peter recognizes the need for edification complexes in the Roman empire, so he brings this to the attention of the Jews.

Χορτος = *green grass, grass which animals feed off of*. Hezekiah in his stupidity was sending millions of dollars to Sennacherib to keep him from attacking. The glory are the details of life which come with prosperity. Flower is ανθος = *something beautiful, something striking*. The Jews prior to the Sennacherib invasion, like the believers in the time of Peter, came to a period of prosperity. There was money, success, pleasure, social life, status symbols, prosperity, etc. these things would fade for believers soon under the Neronian persecutions. Man is like grass and the details of life are like the flowers on the grass. The grass dies, and the flowers drop to the ground. These details are just lying on the ground, and someone else comes along and picks them up. They are not fading away, but they have fallen to the ground. Every generation has the details of life, and people keep saying, this is the answer.

1Peter 1:24 for "All flesh is like grass and all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls,

Present active indicative of *abide*. The Bible is permanent and the doctrine in it is permanent. Rêma and alêthêa is doctrine taking out of the Word and organized into a category. The verb is ευαγγελιζω which does not mean to preach the gospel, but it means to communicate or to announce. Doctrine has to be communicated to us by categories. The logos abides forever; that is all the doctrine in the canon. This rêma is communicated to us. It is really a category. Aorist passive participle.

1Peter 1:25 but the word of the Lord remains forever." And this word is the good news that was preached to you.

This phrase came from Isa. 40, so let's see the context of it. Isaiah 40–60 are some of the messages given day by day, for the year of the Sennacherib crisis.

Piel imperative of *provide comfort*. These are people who are despondent, upset, frightened, confused, etc. when people as a group or an individual gets into a totally hopeless situation. There must be an intensified use of GAP. This will result in comfort. This is not alleviation; this is permanent. Isaiah is to comfort the people. *My people* refers to the Jews during the Sennacherib crisis. You have the message from Me, so get cracking, is God to Isaiah. To comfort people in a crisis, you cannot pansy around; you cannot be a baby about it or say, "I hope so." You have to lay it on the line. There were some people isolated in the Philippines and several possibilities of officers being sent. That guy is too sweet and too nice, and he will have to see some bad things before he is

ready to fight this war. Then they came across a guy and they said, “This guy is a sonuvabitch...” and the general said, “That’s the man.” When you have a job which needs to be done, get a sonuvabitch. Same thing is true of a preacher. You don’t get some nice-guy preacher; do you know how long he would last around here?

Isa 40:1 [Comfort, comfort](#) [or, *lay it on the line for*] [my people, says your God.](#)

It does not mean speak comfortably. It is Piel, which is intensive. This is lucid, clear speaking; it means *level with them*; it is a command. Speak to them or level with them; lay it on the line. These would also be divine norms and standards which they can assimilate. They had been told that the way to do it was to disarm and to go to Egypt for help.

The second verb means *communicate forcefully*. A maximum number of believers will respond to this teaching so that when Sennacherib comes to the gates, they will be calm. They will all erect edification complexes.

These people were called the remnant. Isa. 37:31–32: [And the surviving remnant of the house of Judah shall again take root downward and bear fruit upward. For out of Jerusalem shall go a remnant, and out of Mount Zion a band of survivors. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will do this.](#)

Isa 40:2 [Speak tenderly to Jerusalem, and cry to her that her warfare is ended, that her iniquity is pardoned, that she has received from the LORD's hand double for all her sins.](#)

Then Isaiah speaks about calling out in the desert. It means to speak dogmatically in the desert. The purpose of the parenthesis is to show that the type of ministry that Isaiah had; and he speaks of John the Baptizer, and their voices calling out are parallel.

This is a 3rd reason for the frame of reference. Frame of reference makes it possible to understand advanced doctrine; it sets up norms and standards in the mind; and it allows the pastor to teach and to communicate doctrine. All preachers who have anything to say, it is formed in the mind. They were prepared with a message and they had a maximum amount of doctrine in the frontal lobe. Doctrine must be cycled from the human spirit to the mind. A communicator must transfer doctrine from the human spirit to the mind. There must be words in the mind to match doctrine cycled to the human spirit of the mind. הָרַח means to speak dogmatically. The gap has widened between Thieme and Dallas theological seminary, and they wanted him to do some practical application. There were people speaking on street corners when they ought to be studying Greek and Hebrew. There is this great opportunity to learn this or that; but they had you out there doing rinky dink things. Bob refused. Anyone could pass out a tract on a street corner. Had to fill out a little form, I spent so many hours passing out tracts, so many hours witnessing. The idea was for them to get experience. Bob said, he’ll get this experience later. They gave Bob two years to make up his mind. They gave him 2 years to make up his mind, and eventually let him handle this church was about to close. Bob did not realize it at the time; common sense is, you will get experience for the rest of your life. If you are going to communicate dogmatically, then you need divine truth, not experience.

There are no people in the desert; there is no organized religion in the desert; therefore, the purpose for being in the desert is not practical to most people. If you want to communicate in the desert, then it would make sense to go where there are people. But John the Baptist was told to take his message out into the desert. People came to him. People who are positive will come to you. Isaiah stood on the street corner and taught; positive volition is what the key it. The people gathered. Neither John nor Isaiah would be good in public relations.

Isa 40:3 A voice cries: "In the desert wilderness prepare the way of the LORD; make straight in the desert a highway for our God.

The removal of the 5th cycle of discipline in v. 4: the valley is the danger point. Shall be made low anticipates the fall of the Assyrian army.

Isa 40:4 Every valley shall be lifted up, and every mountain and hill be made low; the uneven ground shall become level, and the rough places a plain.

2nd Advent in v. 5.

Isa 40:5 And the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together, for the mouth of the LORD has spoken."

The voice says, communicate dogmatically, and Isaiah says, "What should I say?"

Isa 40:6 A voice says, "Cry!" And I said, "What shall I cry?" All flesh is grass, and all its beauty is like the flower of the field.

Details of life are seen as good; money is good; success is good. Details of life are removed.

Isa 40:7 The grass withers, the flower fades when the breath of the LORD blows on it; surely the people are grass.

The grass withers means that life is short. Isaiah is to emphasize the importance of the Word.

Isa 40:8 The grass withers, the flower fades, but the word of our God will stand forever.

Having children in close succession makes a person weak, and that is what is in view here. Pual perfect; there is a gradual weakness. She gets weaker and weaker and when she gets to child 7, she dies.

There is an analogy here. The nation is getting weaker as well. They are about to go out under the 5th cycle of discipline. The Word saved the generation of Isaiah, but here in Jeremiah's time, they are rejecting the Word. Bosch has the breakdown of authority and

the divine institutions are breaking down. Deliverance of the sword deals with the attack of Nebuchadnezzar.

Jer. 15:9: *She who bore seven has grown feeble; she has fainted away; her sun went down while it was yet day; she has been shamed and disgraced. And the rest of them I will give to the sword before their enemies, declares the LORD.*"

Internal problems in v. 10. This is the analogy of the previous verses. There is a generation which is born which is lawless. There is a breakdown of the institutions. A total internal breakdown. Israel has not loaned or borrowed money, and people curse them never the less.

Jer 15:10 *Woe is me, my mother, that you bore me, a man of strife and contention to the whole land! I have not lent, nor have I borrowed, yet all of them curse me.*

The time of evil and the time of affliction is the 5th cycle of discipline.

Jer 15:11 *The LORD said, "Have I not set you free for their good? Have I not pleaded for you before the enemy in the time of trouble and in the time of distress?"*

V. 12 is a previous deliverance. Did Assyria break? Yes they did. Assyria is the Iron from the north. Their military was broken in Isaiah's generation.

Jer 15:12 *Does iron break? [or, Can one break iron], iron from the north, and bronze?*

Certainty of the 5th cycle is here.

Jer 15:13 *"Your wealth and your treasures I will give as spoil, without price, for all your sins, throughout all your territory.*

Jer 15:14 *I will make you serve your enemies in a land that you do not know, for in my anger a fire is kindled that shall burn forever."*

Jeremiah makes 4 petitions and each one is an imperative. Niphal is passive with respect to taking vengeance. *Take me not away* refers to the 5th cycle of discipline.

Jer 15:15 *O LORD, you know; remember me and visit me, and take vengeance for me on my persecutors. In your forbearance take me not away; know that for your sake I bear reproach.*

Nebuchadnezzar allowed Jeremiah to be blessed during this time of great discipline. Jeremiah was positive toward doctrine. Jeremiah kept eating God's words, which means positive volition toward doctrine.

Shashown means *inner happiness* and it is a part of the edification complex. Constant and daily function of gap. The result includes inner happiness. The recognition that in the plan of God, all things work together for good.

Jer 15:16 Your words were found, and I ate them, and your words became to me a joy and the delight of my heart, for I am called by your name, O LORD, God of hosts.

Jer 15:17 I did not sit in the company of revelers, nor did I rejoice; I sat alone, because your hand was upon me, for you had filled me with indignation.

Jer 15:18 Why is my pain unceasing, my wound incurable, refusing to be healed? Will you be to me like a deceitful brook, like waters that fail?

Jer 15:19 Therefore thus says the LORD: "If you return, I will restore you, and you shall stand before me. If you utter what is precious, and not what is worthless, you shall be as my mouth. They shall turn to you, but you shall not turn to them.

Jer 15:20 And I will make you to this people a fortified wall of bronze; they will fight against you, but they shall not prevail over you, for I am with you to save you and deliver you, declares the LORD.

Jer 15:21 I will deliver you out of the hand of the wicked, and redeem you from the grasp of the ruthless."

Isa 40:1 Comfort, comfort my people, says your God.

Isa 40:2 Speak tenderly to Jerusalem, and cry to her that her warfare is ended, that her iniquity is pardoned, that she has received from the LORD's hand double for all her sins.

Isa 40:3 A voice cries: "In the wilderness prepare the way of the LORD; make straight in the desert a highway for our God.

Isa 40:4 Every valley shall be lifted up, and every mountain and hill be made low; the uneven ground shall become level, and the rough places a plain.

Isa 40:5 And the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together, for the mouth of the LORD has spoken."

Isa 40:6 A voice says, "Cry!" And I said, "What shall I cry?" All flesh is grass, and all its beauty is like the flower of the field.

Isa 40:7 The grass withers, the flower fades when the breath of the LORD blows on it; surely the people are grass.

Isa 40:8 The grass withers, the flower fades, but the word of our God will stand forever.

1Peter 1:24 for "All flesh is like grass and all its glory like the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower falls,

1Peter 1:25 but the word of the Lord remains forever." And this word is the good news that was preached to you.

Lesson #40 Suffering Basic Bible Doctrine Eccles. 1:7 circa 1/10/69

I'm the musical director, and we happen to find "Dixie" to be a great and meaningful song; and if you Yankees disagree, bear in mind it was written by a Yankee.

How happiness can make you miserable, a study in Ecclesiastes. If a believer and an unbeliever are outdoors and it is raining, both are being hit by the rain. There are areas of suffering for believers and unbelievers alike.

Doctrine of Suffering

this is the devil's world and the devil is a genius, but he cannot manipulate a lot of people on this earth without a lot of suffering. We live in the devil's world, and there is going to be natural suffering as a result. We all had intentions of preparing a good meal. The character who comes to dinner has ulcers and can only have crackers and milk. Jesus said "There will be wars and rumors of war;" and He said, "The poor you will have with you always." Satan attempts to bring the Millennium in on his own. When people try the dove plan or try disarmament with the idea of getting peace, and it will result in WWIII. We need to drop some H bombs on North Vietnam, starting with Hanoi. Some teens told their teachers and their teachers said, "If we do that, we will make the Russians and the Chinese mad." Our policy as we have it endangers us more.

1. First cause of suffering: loss of health.
2. The administration of human justice; law enforcement. If a believer or unbeliever breaks the law, they can suffer under law enforcement.
3. People: when people malign, gossip, run you down, exert their pride, people fight people, which is war and violence; ostracism, persecution.
4. Privation. Hunger, thirst, exposure.
5. Weather. Storms, disasters like volcanoes, etc. Island near Crete in the Mediterranean and it blew up and destroyed most of Crete and their population. The excavations of Pompey and Herculean when Mount Vesuvius blew in 97 A.D. It is a fantastic story which has been excavated.
6. Social suffering. Loneliness, people do not know what to do with that. Boredom is another type of social suffering. It is a compounding type suffering. If you are bored, you are suffering slightly, but it can start a chain of suffering. Social ostracism.
7. Mental suffering. Mental attitude sins and self-induced misery.
8. Suffering which comes from the details of life. Money is a detail; you can enjoy money and have it legitimately and have lots of it. There is nothing wrong with that. Socialism, which is a religious thing, which says that if you have too much money, there is something wrong with that. Christianity and socialism are antithetical. Pleasure you assume would be a source of happiness, but not necessarily. Social life, status symbols. Misery comes to the believer who is minus doctrine. A believer is either growing and building an edification complex structure or he is retrogressing. These details are things which we associate happiness.

We will study the 12 reasons why Christians suffer next time.

We are going to get the general concept of Ecclesiastes. Inner happiness comes from Bible doctrine. Solomon was not a preacher. Qoheleth, which means *a man with a message*. This man learns from experience.

Eccles. 1:1 [The words of the man with the message, the son of David, king in Jerusalem.](#)

A believer with scar tissue on their soul, which they put there being negative toward doctrine. No matter what they touch, it turns to misery. A believer with scar tissue takes things which are normally associated with happiness, and they become misery for this person.

You can have RM/RW and be totally miserable. Doctrine which is cycled by faith becomes ἐπίγνωσις. Doctrine is the foundation and grace orientation is the 1st floor and inner happiness is the 2nd floor. Capacity to love; mastery of the details of life. The problem is, if you have scar tissue on the soul, every happy situation turns to misery for you, and it will cause misery to others as well. Scar tissue converts a happy event or family relations or whatever is seen as happiness; and scar tissue destroys a relationship. It is not hard to get into suffering.

Bob and his father were sitting in a bar in New Orleans and Bob was 9 years old, and they were caught between trains. He has a scotch and soda. He would point out things to Bob to teach him about life. This guy in a bar with this beautiful woman, and Bob's father told him that he was not a happy person. Even with RM/RW, and if she is a beautiful woman, with scar tissue, you are miserable.

Most of us want to be happy. Some found some social life, and peeled off from Bible class to enjoy this social life. Remember the epigram, *put the Lord first*; this does not mean to say it 5 different ways and strain to make it work, and it still does not seem to occur. If both have inner happiness, and relaxed mental attitude, mastery of the details of life, and they have each other and they could not be happier. However, if they have scar tissue, then they have misery to the maximum. A little scar tissue converts all of to unhappiness and suffering.

There will be suffering in life, but there is also happiness in that suffering. How can you maintain happiness with the details of life?

Eccles. 1:2 [Vanity of vanities, says the man with the message, vanity of vanities! All is vanity.](#)

This is the left and right bank. Maximum scar tissue. You get cynical with all of this scar tissue. One generation makes the same mistakes as the previous.

Eccles. 1:3–8: [What does man gain by all the toil at which he toils under the sun? A generation goes, and a generation comes, but the earth remains forever. The sun rises, and the sun goes down, and hastens to the place where it rises. The wind blows to the south and goes around to the north; around and around goes the wind, and on its circuits the wind returns. All streams run to the sea, but the sea is not full; to the place where the streams flow, there they flow again. All things are full of weariness; a man cannot utter it; the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing.](#)

This is quite an achievement to have everything that money can buy, and still be unhappy. All the details of life have not made Solomon happy.

Eccles. 1:9–13: [What has been is what will be, and what has been done is what will be done, and there is nothing new under the sun. Is there a thing of which it is said, "See, this is new"? It has been already in the ages before us. There is no remembrance of former things, nor will there be any remembrance of later things yet to be among those who come after. I the Preacher have been king over Israel in Jerusalem. And I applied my heart to seek and to search out by wisdom all that is done under heaven. It is an unhappy business that God has given to the children of man to be busy with.](#)

A person can have great information, like a surgeon. Applied his academic knowledge to a situation. However, on the left bank, doctrine cannot be applied from the mind. The only way that you will ever have the capacity is doctrine. Just as medical knowledge can only be applied from the mind, doctrine can only be applied from the human spirit. With doctrine in the soul, you cannot apply it.

You discover the RM or the RW with doctrine, because you will have built-in radar to find them. If you are loaded up with scar tissue, you will have nothing but trouble. It is mockery for person with scar tissue to say, "I love you" but he has no capacity. Vacant 4th floor.

Solomon did not suffering in vain. He is a great illustration of how not to do it. He had everting except probably his RW, which was probably the woman in SoS. He did not have the ability to appreciate his RW.

Without doctrine in the human spirit, you can have things which make a person happy, and they make you miserable. You cannot even have fun being an alcoholic with scar tissue. There is just no fun in life.

In v. 12, he says that he is the king, and that he gives himself to search out all the wisdom under heaven. Bobby called Bob last night and said, "I was tired from studying." Bob just had to laugh. The school grint gets to be monotonous.

He has seen all the works under the sun and all is vanity. His human spirit is empty. Left bank is scar tissue; human spirit is empty. Nothing in the human spirit.

Eccles. 1:14–18: [I have seen everything that is done under the sun, and behold, all is vanity and a striving after wind. What is crooked cannot be made straight, and what is lacking cannot be counted. I said in my heart, "I have acquired great wisdom, surpassing all who were over Jerusalem before me, and my heart has had great experience of wisdom and knowledge." And I applied my heart to know wisdom and to know madness and folly. I perceived that this also is but a striving after wind. For in much wisdom is much vexation, and he who increases knowledge increases sorrow.](#)

He studied psychology and fun, and no good.

Eccles. 2:1–7: I said in my heart, "Come now, I will test you with pleasure; enjoy yourself." But behold, this also was vanity. I said of laughter, "It is mad," and of pleasure, "What use is it?" I searched with my heart how to cheer my body with wine--my heart still guiding me with wisdom--and how to lay hold on folly, till I might see what was good for the children of man to do under heaven during the few days of their life. I made great works. I built houses and planted vineyards for myself. I made myself gardens and parks, and planted in them all kinds of fruit trees. I made myself pools from which to water the forest of growing trees. I bought male and female slaves, and had slaves who were born in my house. I had also great possessions of herds and flocks, more than any who had been before me in Jerusalem.

He tried wine, and it just made everyone seem foolish. He tried building up great buildings, and other building projects.

Eccles. 2:8–13: I also gathered for myself silver and gold and the treasure of kings and provinces. I got singers, both men and women, and many concubines, the delight of the children of man. So I became great and surpassed all who were before me in Jerusalem. Also my wisdom remained with me. And whatever my eyes desired I did not keep from them. I kept my heart from no pleasure, for my heart found pleasure in all my toil, and this was my reward for all my toil. Then I considered all that my hands had done and the toil I had expended in doing it, and behold, all was vanity and a striving after wind, and there was nothing to be gained under the sun. So I turned to consider wisdom and madness and folly. For what can the man do who comes after the king? Only what has already been done. Then I saw that there is more gain in wisdom than in folly, as there is more gain in light than in darkness.

He has everything we could want and he is miserable. He then tries some human good projects. The wise man dies just like a fool. He hates life. All is emptiness.

Eccles. 2:14–22: The wise person has his eyes in his head, but the fool walks in darkness. And yet I perceived that the same event happens to all of them. Then I said in my heart, "What happens to the fool will happen to me also. Why then have I been so very wise?" And I said in my heart that this also is vanity. For of the wise as of the fool there is no enduring remembrance, seeing that in the days to come all will have been long forgotten. How the wise dies just like the fool! So I hated life, because what is done under the sun was grievous to me, for all is vanity and a striving after wind. I hated all my toil in which I toiled under the sun, seeing that I must leave it to the man who will come after me, and who knows whether he will be wise or a fool? Yet he will be master of all for which I toiled and used my wisdom under the sun. This also is vanity. So I turned about and gave my heart up to despair over all the toil of my labors under the sun, because sometimes a person who has toiled with wisdom and knowledge and skill must leave everything to be enjoyed by someone who did not toil for it. This also is vanity and a great evil. What has a man from all the toil and striving of heart with which he toils beneath the sun?

And if he builds up a great deal, he does not know if his son will be a great man or a fool, so he may leave all of this in the hands of an ass.

He runs into a person producing divine good. This is a man whose labor is in wisdom and knowledge. This one is vanity and great evil.

Eccles. 2:23–26: For all his days are full of sorrow, and his work is a vexation. Even in the night his heart does not rest. This also is vanity. There is nothing better for a person than that he should eat and drink and find enjoyment in his toil. This also, I saw, is from the hand of God, for apart from him who can eat or who can have enjoyment? For to the one who pleases him God has given wisdom and knowledge and joy, but to the sinner he has given the business of gathering and collecting, only to give to one who pleases God. This also is vanity and a striving after wind.

He comes up with a philosophy of eating and drinking, but he is not happy. He sees a man with an edification complex that person is in good shape. Wisdom is doctrine in the human spirit. There is a contrast throughout these pass few passages. Solomon is the sinner of this passage. This other man has nothing but he is happy; Solomon has everything and he is unhappy. We make out own misery. As long as we are still alive, we can start the reverse process. This is the thrust of Ecclesiastes. We must understand that this is about Solomon with everything and he is miserable.

Scar tissue on the soul makes it impossible for things that ordinarily bring happiness and you are wiped out. We are not the only one who isn't happy. Also, whatever you touch, it becomes miserable as well. The innocent suffer with the guilty, and this is a true principle (2Cor. 12). No one lives to himself and no one dies to himself.

You didn't have any fun this last Christmas; you had no edification complex.

Eccles. 4:1–3 Again I saw all the oppressions that are done under the sun. And behold, the tears of the oppressed, and they had no one to comfort them! On the side of their oppressors there was power, and there was no one to comfort them. And I thought the dead who are already dead more fortunate than the living who are still alive. But better than both is he who has not yet been and has not seen the evil deeds that are done under the sun.

Solomon got apes and peacocks from the Queen of Sheba.

Solomon wishes that he is dead; he praises the dead; they are the lucky ones. Solomon's income was \$1,000,000/year from once source alone. And he is miserable. "The dead are sure lucky." He thinks the dead are in a great place.

Eccles. 4:4–7 Then I saw that all toil and all skill in work come from a man's envy of his neighbor. This also is vanity and a striving after wind. The fool folds his hands and eats his own flesh. Better is a handful of quietness than two hands full of toil and a striving after wind. Again, I saw vanity under the sun:

He now describes himself as having nothing.

Eccles. 4:8–10 one person who has no other, either son or brother, yet there is no end to all his toil, and his eyes are never satisfied with riches, so that he never asks, "For whom am I toiling and depriving myself of pleasure?" This also is vanity and an unhappy business. Two are better than one, because they have a good reward for their toil. For if they fall, one will lift up his fellow. But woe to him who is alone when he falls and has not another to lift him up!

A woman who thinks, just give me this guy and some new furniture, and I will be alright. Everything that we touch will make us miserable. No matter how good taste or bad taste it is, you will be miserable with scar tissue on the soul. You always wanted a large Grecian bath with a purple bird on the tile flying into the sunset, and you get it and you are miserable.

If you are a believer in Jesus Christ and you need to get exegetical teaching in some way. If you don't, then one aperture shuts down from scar tissue. Soulless subjectivity comes from Satanic doctrine infiltrating the soul. You do not have to be demon-possessed to be miserable. All you need is scar tissue on the soul, the darkness on the soul, and people might think that you are demon possessed. Once you have scar tissue on one bank of the soul, then you build it up on the other side. Social and mental attitude sins which build up scar tissue. You must build it on one side first.

This guy has everything and he is miserable; and now he realizes that he cannot take it with him and he is miserable realizing that he cannot take it with him.

Eccles. 4:11–16 Again, if two lie together, they keep warm, but how can one keep warm alone? And though a man might prevail against one who is alone, two will withstand him--a threefold cord is not quickly broken. Better was a poor and wise youth than an old and foolish king who no longer knew how to take advice. For he went from prison to the throne, though in his own kingdom he had been born poor. I saw all the living who move about under the sun, along with that youth who was to stand in the king's place. There was no end of all the people, all of whom he led. Yet those who come later will not rejoice in him. Surely this also is vanity and a striving after wind.

Eccles. 6:1–4 There is an evil that I have seen under the sun, and it lies heavy on mankind: a man to whom God gives wealth, possessions, and honor, so that he lacks nothing of all that he desires, yet God does not give him power to enjoy them, but a stranger enjoys them. This is vanity; it is a grievous evil. If a man fathers a hundred children and lives many years, so that the days of his years are many, but his soul is not satisfied with life's good things, and he also has no burial, I say that a stillborn child is better off than he. For it comes in vanity and goes in darkness, and in darkness its name is covered.

The power to eat is the capacity to enjoy. He has ulcers and cannot enjoy anything. Solomon can buy any kind of food and any sort of spice and he cannot eat it. The details of life can be enjoyed like a good meal; and you can have them and be miserable. If you have scar tissue, you can enjoy nothing. With the edification complex, you can enjoy most anything.

Eccles. 6:5 Moreover, it has not seen the sun or known anything, yet it finds rest rather than he.

Eccles. 6:6 Even though he should live a thousand years twice over, yet enjoy no good--do not all go to the one place?

Eccles. 6:7 All the toil of man is for his mouth, yet his appetite is not satisfied.

Eccles. 6:8 For what advantage has the wise man over the fool? And what does the poor man have who knows how to conduct himself before the living?

Eccles. 6:9 Better is the sight of the eyes than the wandering of the appetite: this also is vanity and a striving after wind.

Eccles. 6:10 Whatever has come to be has already been named, and it is known what man is, and that he is not able to dispute with one stronger than he.

Eccles. 6:11 The more words, the more vanity, and what is the advantage to man?

Eccles. 6:12 For who knows what is good for man while he lives the few days of his vain life, which he passes like a shadow? For who can tell man what will be after him under the sun?

Some are afraid of old age.

Eccles. 12:1–3: Remember also your Creator in the days of your youth, before the evil days come and the years draw near of which you will say, "I have no pleasure in them"; before the sun and the light and the moon and the stars are darkened and the clouds return after the rain, in the day when the keepers of the house tremble, and the strong men are bent, and the grinders cease because they are few, and those who look through the windows are dimmed,

the keepers of the house are the hands, which are weak; and his legs are weak; and his teeth are missing. He is blind. He is old and he enjoys nothing.

the other grinding is indigestion. Shut doors are his libido. A bird chirps and he wakes up; he has insomnia. But he cannot enjoy music,

Eccles. 12:4–7 and the doors on the street are shut--when the sound of the grinding is low, and one rises up at the sound of a bird, and all the daughters of song are brought low-- they are afraid also of what is high, and terrors are in the way; the almond tree blossoms, the grasshopper drags itself along, and desire fails, because man is going to his eternal home, and the mourners go about the streets-- before the silver cord is snapped, or the golden bowl is broken, or the pitcher is shattered at the fountain, or the wheel broken at the cistern, and the dust returns to the earth as it was, and the spirit returns to God who gave it.

Age is good when it is bottled; and age is good when you have an edification complex. Bob supposes that he is old at 51 and he is happier than he has ever been in his life.

Altophobia. Almond trees is white hair; grasshopper burden is

Silver cord is the spinal cord; golden bowl is the cerebral hemisphere; then a heart attack with the next phrase.

The human spirit returned to God Who gave it. You take your doctrine with you. You cannot take your wife, gf, your car or your cat, but you will take your doctrine with you.

Eccles. 12:8 Vanity of vanities, says the Preacher; all is vanity.

Lesson #41 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine Eccles. 11:9 circa 1/17/70

A principle of suffering; a principle of unhappiness. Misery and frustration can be a part of having the details of life. The details of life are so designed to bring us pleasure; but if we do not have that certain knack, everything we touch will turn to misery.

In 1923 there was an important meeting at the Edgewater Hotel president of a steel company, presidents of NY Stock Exchange, and several other presidents. They were all fabulously wealthy. They represented the greatest collection of greatest wealth in the world. With scar tissue, money will make you miserable; success makes you miserable, social life, etc.

25 years later. President of Steel company died broke (Chas. Swaab); another died penniless in another land, one went insane; another died abroad insolvent, one went to jail; another pardoned from prison to die at home; a suicide; another suicide; and another. Happiness or the things normally associated with happiness, made them unhappy. All of these men are named.

People like to hide the fact that they are getting old, but you cannot be happy getting old. Bob will be 52 in a few months. If you are ashamed of your age, get out now while you still can. No reason to be ashamed of getting older. Past 30, you know that youth is wasted on youth. This is a passage which says to be happy while you are young.

Young people cannot appreciate youth. There is a secret to appreciating it. Rejoice in your youth; let your heart cheer you. It is easy as a believer to look for something, to expect something, to be impatient about something, to know you will get something from God. You will get frustrated, disturbed, you will sublimate. All kinds of wrong turns that you can make.

Young people are so concerned with the details of life, that they lose their way.

Solomon is speaking to young people. Inhale Bible doctrine and that is what cheers you. Γνώσις transferred to ἐπίγνωσις. Abraham had a period in his life called operation jackass. He had a test right away after this promise. His wife came up with some very bad advice and it was all her idea. He should not have been taking advice from his wife. He took her maid Hagar, and that was a mistake. The idea was to have a son. God promised Abram a son from his own loins. He passed the point of climacteric. He was 99 years old and

sexually dead. His wife was also sexually dead. Abraham had to wait; God gave him a promise and he would not believe that promise.

After the promise, Abram suggested some ranch hand; then Sarah suggested Hagar, who bore him Ishmael. They went from one problem to another. They would never wait. God is waiting for Abraham to relax and believe Him. Bible doctrine is cycled up into the frame of reference. So God made Abraham wait until the situation was hopeless. When Abraham was 99 and sexually dead; and his wife was in a hopeless situation where she could not possibly become pregnant, and He staggered not at the promise of God, but was strong in faith giving glory to God. His frame of reference worked. Abraham, for the first time, believed what he was unable to believe before. Rom. 4:17–21 is one side of the picture and this is the other.

God made Abram's body young again and gave him the power of procreation. When Abraham was 99 and Sarah was 90, they are procreating, RM/RW; and she becomes pregnant. Menopause and climacteric and the first time you hear these words, you were in church. There is no sense in being nebulous, so that you can say, it was good to have been there.

Abram was in a hopeless situation before God performed this miracle.

Eccles. 11:9: [Rejoice, O young man, in your youth, and let your heart cheer you in the days of your youth. Walk in the ways of your heart and the sight of your eyes. But know that for all these things God will bring you into judgment.](#)

For all of these things that you do, God will bring you into judgment. You can grow up and you can retrogress.

Eccles. 11:10: [Remove vexation \[turmoil\] from your heart, and put away pain from your body, for youth and the dawn of life are vanity.](#)

Until you have the capacity, God is not going to give you what you want in life. Your ability to enjoy depends upon your capacity in grace, and this depends upon GAP.

Psychology says that what happens to you in childhood determines your life and your maladjustments. The Bible indicates that, however you fail in childhood, these things are empty and it can be set aside by regeneration, the function of GAP and the construction of the edification complex.

For some of you, everything that you touch, it turns to misery. You have children, it turns to misery; you have dogs and cats, it turns to misery. You walk in just like Henry Gibson's "Dollhouse." It does not have to be this way.

There is a correction, and that comes from v. 9: [Rejoice, O young man, in your youth, and let your heart cheer you in the days of your youth. Walk in the ways of your heart and the sight of your eyes. But know that for all these things God will bring you into judgment.](#)

Solomon lost it, but he eventually recovered. Solomon wrote the SoS probably at the peak of his failure. Solomon also collected, wrote and arranged Proverbs, which are doctrines essential for doctrines essential in this life. Eccles. 12:9 tells us about his writing Proverbs. Wise is the frame of reference and the scale of values. After all of Solomon's failures, God brought him back. Solomon still taught the people knowledge. He lost one of the greatest spiritual lives of that age. He had the works and he lost it; after his grace recovery, he became a teacher of doctrine. This is a grace recovery.

Eccles. 12:9 Besides being wise, the Preacher also taught the people knowledge, weighing and studying and arranging many proverbs with great care.

Ezek. 16:1–11: Again the word of the LORD came to me: "Son of man, make known to Jerusalem her abominations, and say, Thus says the Lord GOD to Jerusalem: Your origin and your birth are of the land of the Canaanites; your father was an Amorite and your mother a Hittite. And as for your birth, on the day you were born your cord was not cut, nor were you washed with water to cleanse you, nor rubbed with salt, nor wrapped in swaddling cloths. No eye pitied you, to do any of these things to you out of compassion for you, but you were cast out on the open field, for you were abhorred, on the day that you were born. "And when I passed by you and saw you wallowing in your blood, I said to you in your blood, 'Live!' I said to you in your blood, 'Live!' I made you flourish like a plant of the field. And you grew up and became tall and arrived at full adornment. Your breasts were formed, and your hair had grown; yet you were naked and bare. "When I passed by you again and saw you, behold, you were at the age for love, and I spread the corner of my garment over you and covered your nakedness; I made my vow to you and entered into a covenant with you, declares the Lord GOD, and you became mine. Then I bathed you with water and washed off your blood from you and anointed you with oil. I clothed you also with embroidered cloth and shod you with fine leather. I wrapped you in fine linen and covered you with silk. And I adorned you with ornaments and put bracelets on your wrists and a chain on your neck.

God is speaking about Jerusalem; and Jerusalem was gruesome. No eye pitied you. No one looked at this baby with a dead mother, covered with blood, the naval still attached, and you looked awful. No one pitied you. No one was doing anything for this baby.

The Lord comes by and sees this mess, covered with blood; a real mess. This is quite gruesome. "I said to you, in your blood, 'Live.'" the dead mother is the sin nature, by way of illustration. "When I found you, you were a hideous, repulsive nothing" which describes all of us, by the way. This is grace: "Live." Giving Abraham a child, allowing Solomon to teach in his old age is all grace.

Bob understands that there is a contrast between a dead mother attached to a bloody baby and beautiful flowers. Grace turns him into a flower. This is a woman child, by the way. That is what the breasts are all about. Bob suspects that the two words for naked refers to a naked soul and a naked body, the latter working overtime so that the naked soul gets scar tissue.

Eze 16:12–21: And I put a ring on your nose and earrings in your ears and a beautiful crown on your head. Thus you were adorned with gold and silver, and your clothing was of fine linen and silk and embroidered cloth. You ate fine flour and honey and oil. You grew exceedingly beautiful and advanced to royalty. And your renown went forth among the nations because of your beauty, for it was perfect through the splendor that I had bestowed on you, declares the Lord GOD. "But you trusted in your beauty and played the whore because of your renown and lavished your whorings on any passerby; your beauty became his. You took some of your garments and made for yourself colorful shrines, and on them played the whore. The like has never been, nor ever shall be. You also took your beautiful jewels of my gold and of my silver, which I had given you, and made for yourself images of men, and with them played the whore. And you took your embroidered garments to cover them, and set my oil and my incense before them. Also my bread that I gave you--I fed you with fine flour and oil and honey--you set before them for a pleasing aroma; and so it was, declares the Lord GOD. And you took your sons and your daughters, whom you had borne to me, and these you sacrificed to them to be devoured. Were your whorings so small a matter that you slaughtered my children and delivered them up as an offering by fire to them?"

The badger skin is a fine cloak; and these are a variety of things which indicated that God really decked out this baby as she grew. She ate the finest of foods and she prospered in the kingdom. This is a person functioning under GAP. "Your beauty was perfect because of My grace."

God gave a perfect love and the capacity to respond to it; God gave them everything. But scar tissue builds up, so she pours out her fornication on everyone. This scar tissue opens up the vacuum of the soul. There is a RM for Israel, but Israel takes God's love and gave it to every guy with a mouthful of teeth.

She had all of this beauty and men began to tell her how beautiful she was and she began to believe it. However, she cannot identify the RM because she has scar tissue on the right bank and promiscuity builds up this scar tissue. The RM stimulates her soul first, and she cannot respond with her soul because of promiscuity, and therefore, she is unable to respond with her beauty.

This is about Israel fornicating with the false religions. Female masturbation with the phallic symbols. What should have gone to God in the Levitical offerings went to false religions.

Ezek. 16:22–38: And in all your abominations and your whorings you did not remember the days of your youth, when you were naked and bare, wallowing in your blood. "And after all your wickedness (woe, woe to you! declares the Lord GOD), you built yourself a vaulted chamber and made yourself a lofty place in every square. At the head of every street you built your lofty place and made your beauty an abomination, offering yourself to any passerby and multiplying your whoring. You also played the whore with the Egyptians, your lustful neighbors, multiplying your whoring, to provoke me to anger. Behold, therefore, I stretched out my hand against you and diminished your allotted portion and delivered you to the greed of your enemies, the daughters of the Philistines, who were ashamed of your

lewd behavior. You played the whore also with the Assyrians, because you were not satisfied; yes, you played the whore with them, and still you were not satisfied. You multiplied your whoring also with the trading land of Chaldea, and even with this you were not satisfied. "How lovesick is your heart, declares the Lord GOD, because you did all these things, the deeds of a brazen prostitute, building your vaulted chamber at the head of every street, and making your lofty place in every square. Yet you were not like a prostitute, because you scorned payment. Adulterous wife, who receives strangers instead of her husband! Men give gifts to all prostitutes, but you gave your gifts to all your lovers, bribing them to come to you from every side with your whorings. So you were different from other women in your whorings. No one solicited you to play the whore, and you gave payment, while no payment was given to you; therefore you were different. "Therefore, O prostitute, hear the word of the LORD: Thus says the Lord GOD, Because your lust was poured out and your nakedness uncovered in your whorings with your lovers, and with all your abominable idols, and because of the blood of your children that you gave to them, therefore, behold, I will gather all your lovers with whom you took pleasure, all those you loved and all those you hated. I will gather them against you from every side and will uncover your nakedness to them, that they may see all your nakedness. And I will judge you as women who commit adultery and shed blood are judged, and bring upon you the blood of wrath and jealousy.

In v. 24, she builds for herself a house of prostitution, and then began to hustle in the street; a stall on the corner. You have made your beauty despised. You have opened your feet to everyone who passes by.

This began with the Egyptian bf; and from there, Israel got involved with the Philistines. Usually anything goes with them, but they became ashamed of her lewdness. The Jews have played the whore with the Assyrians. No RM, lots of scar tissue.

She builds her own cathouse and made a stall in every street instead of in the mountains. She got to a place where she would take on anyone; and she gave it away free. This is also a picture of what a person is like when God finds us.

The star quarterback giving his testimony never mentions when he dropped the pass at the goal line with no one within 10 yards of him; and Bob did this.

Ezek. 16:39–63: And I will give you into their hands, and they shall throw down your vaulted chamber and break down your lofty places. They shall strip you of your clothes and take your beautiful jewels and leave you naked and bare. They shall bring up a crowd against you, and they shall stone you and cut you to pieces with their swords. And they shall burn your houses and execute judgments upon you in the sight of many women. I will make you stop playing the whore, and you shall also give payment no more. So will I satisfy my wrath on you, and my jealousy shall depart from you. I will be calm and will no more be angry. Because you have not remembered the days of your youth, but have enraged me with all these things, therefore, behold, I have returned your deeds upon your head, declares the Lord GOD. Have you not committed lewdness in addition to all your abominations? "Behold, everyone who uses proverbs will use this proverb about you: 'Like

mother, like daughter.' You are the daughter of your mother, who loathed her husband and her children; and you are the sister of your sisters, who loathed their husbands and their children. Your mother was a Hittite and your father an Amorite. And your elder sister is Samaria, who lived with her daughters to the north of you; and your younger sister, who lived to the south of you, is Sodom with her daughters. Not only did you walk in their ways and do according to their abominations; within a very little time you were more corrupt than they in all your ways. As I live, declares the Lord GOD, your sister Sodom and her daughters have not done as you and your daughters have done. Behold, this was the guilt of your sister Sodom: she and her daughters had pride, excess of food, and prosperous ease, but did not aid the poor and needy. They were haughty and did an abomination before me. So I removed them, when I saw it. Samaria has not committed half your sins. You have committed more abominations than they, and have made your sisters appear righteous by all the abominations that you have committed. Bear your disgrace, you also, for you have intervened on behalf of your sisters. Because of your sins in which you acted more abominably than they, they are more in the right than you. So be ashamed, you also, and bear your disgrace, for you have made your sisters appear righteous. "I will restore their fortunes, both the fortunes of Sodom and her daughters, and the fortunes of Samaria and her daughters, and I will restore your own fortunes in their midst, that you may bear your disgrace and be ashamed of all that you have done, becoming a consolation to them. As for your sisters, Sodom and her daughters shall return to their former state, and Samaria and her daughters shall return to their former state, and you and your daughters shall return to your former state. Was not your sister Sodom a byword in your mouth in the day of your pride, before your wickedness was uncovered? Now you have become an object of reproach for the daughters of Syria and all those around her, and for the daughters of the Philistines, those all around who despise you. You bear the penalty of your lewdness and your abominations, declares the LORD. "For thus says the Lord GOD: I will deal with you as you have done, you who have despised the oath in breaking the covenant, yet I will remember my covenant with you in the days of your youth, and I will establish for you an everlasting covenant. Then you will remember your ways and be ashamed when you take your sisters, both your elder and your younger, and I give them to you as daughters, but not on account of the covenant with you. I will establish my covenant with you, and you shall know that I am the LORD, that you may remember and be confounded, and never open your mouth again because of your shame, when I atone for you for all that you have done, declares the Lord GOD."

v. 60 you can recover. God is there. If you are alive then you can recover. You are not anything special because you have blown it. Anyone can blow it. God remembers the covenant which He made with her before she began swinging. Israel has changed and has done all kinds of things; God does not change. "You will remember your ways and be ashamed."

capacity to love category #1. Never be confused about grace. Don't run around and tell people what a whore you have been; you just move on. Do not open up your mouth in shame. Some have been so respectable all your lives that you do not understand this. Self righteousness can dull your thinking. You can be real dumb about things like this.

Being pacified toward them is peace and reconciliation. What happened to Solomon when he bounced back? He taught. And Abraham: he had Isaac.

Eccles. 12:9–14: Besides being wise, the Preacher also taught the people knowledge, weighing and studying and arranging many proverbs with great care. The Preacher sought to find words of delight, and uprightly he wrote words of truth. The words of the wise are like goads, and like nails firmly fixed are the collected sayings; they are given by one Shepherd. My son, beware of anything beyond these. Of making many books there is no end, and much study is a weariness of the flesh. The end of the matter; all has been heard. Fear God and keep his commandments, for this is the whole duty of man. For God will bring every deed into judgment, with every secret thing, whether good or evil.

A goad is a sharp instrument to jab you to get you to move. A goad is a super nail. Two kinds of nails here. One jabs you and sometimes there is a handle. Another nail is to hang something onto a wall. One jabs you to get you going and the other helps you to build an edification complex. It is all from one shepherd.

Much studying is a weary to the flesh. Keep His commandments for this is the entire responsibility of man. God will bring everything to the light, whether good or bad. Divine good versus human good.

The doctrine of inner happiness for next time.

Lesson #42 Happiness Suffering Basic Bible Doctrine circa 1/23/70

We've been in Ecclesiastes. The details of life can be a source of suffering when the believer is not functioning daily under GAP. Social life, money, success, health, loved ones, sex, materialistic things and status symbols. These things are generally associated with happiness and most consider these things to be the road to happiness. It is possible to possess some or all of these things and to be totally miserable.

Doctrine of Happiness

1. God has always had perfect happiness in eternity past. There was never a time when God did not have perfect happiness. The idea that God is miserable at any time is a myth. No one can make God miserable. When God is said to be angry, wrath, etc, these are simply anthropopathisms. The Godhead has always been happy.
2. One of God's objectives is for us to be happy as well. He would like for us to carry around within us perfect inner happiness. If you are not perfectly happy, then you are out of the will of God right now.
3. Happiness is a part of God's character. It is impossible for God to change His love for us; we possess His life, eternal life. Billions of years ago, He knew every problem and difficulty that we would face and He made provision for these things back in eternity past.

4. Transferring agency: in eternity past, in the doctrine of decrees, God chose to share His happiness with us in time. Therefore, if He is going to share His happiness, then he must share a part of His capacity to love. Neh. 8:10
5. All of this was accomplished through the principle of grace. God can only share His happiness through grace. There is no system of getting blessing out of God through our own works and ability. We might as well quit fighting grace. We are up to our ears with the norms and standards of our soul. We are going to help God and God does not need our help. God is offended by you wanting to deserve His blessing. Prior to salvation, you had opinions; you had norms and standards and all of your life you have been building up norms and standards. However, on the day that you are saved, all of these norms and standards are obsolete. Bob illustrates the new life as the Metric system as versus the old foot/yard/inch system. You can be saved one day and be self-opinionated from thereon in about what is spiritual and what is not. Imitate someone; never crack a smile; never tell a dirty joke, look stern in church. When you have these standards, you are walking around with a yardstick in a metric world. Bible doctrine is cycled back into the emind and it sets up a new conscience; new norms and standards. That which is cycled into the mind is divine viewpoint along with a new frame of reference. People will tell you how nice you are and you will be pushed and pulled through life. However, as far as God is concerned, you are nothing, from physical birth on, to recommend you. There is no other way to slice it. You cannot bribe God to bless you. You don't buy God; you don't bribe God. When you accept Christ as Savior, you want to switch back to measuring everything in inches, but what is there is obsolete. The first floor of the edification complex is grace orientation. You will never know anything of happiness until you get the first floor of your edification complex constructed. No happiness apart from grace. God chooses to share His happiness in time with man.
6. Grace represents the total character of God and this is His ability to provide for us on the basis of His character. Why do the wicked prosper. Some of the worst stinkers you will ever see get some of the greatest blessings in life. "Why do they get so much, and yet I am so good." The world is filled with good people. Why do the good die young? What happens to the good? The good are really caught; this is not advocating not being good. But, God is not impressed with our good, our sins, our desire, looks, exterior. There is nothing we have which impresses God. We are lucky that He never blesses us on the basis of Who and What He is. All of this is accomplished by the principle of grace. This means provision of many things. Canon of Scripture, GAP, filling of the Spirit, pastor-teacher, etc.
7. Such happiness is confined to the plan of God. Man enters the plan of God by faith in Christ. Becoming a Christian does not mean automatic happiness. John 17:17 GAP required for happiness. Possibility of happiness begins with salvation, but it is only potential and it depends upon gap and construction of the edification complex.
8. Unbelievers can be happy with the RM/RW. Some of us know unbelievers who are happy. Some are even happier than some people in Bible class tonite. Human happiness is a reality; it is temporary and it is superficial. It does not sustain in

pressure or in adversity. Generally speaking, human happiness depends upon pleasant circumstances and the details of life.

9. God has designed happiness to be stabilized and permanent within the framework of the edification complex. The inner framework of the edification complex sustains. This makes gap the key to happiness. 1John 1:4.
10. The word happiness comes in the plural and it is often rendered *blessed*; but it should be rendered happinesses. Asherê is the Hebrew. Makarioi in the Greek. The plural explains that the two sources of happiness to the believer. The filling of the Spirit. The edification complex John 17:13 this suggests, in the plural, the existence of the edification complex of the soul. There are two sources.
11. The basic source is gap. Eph. 4:23–24 Matt. 4:4 Jer. 15:16 James 1:25 Psalm 119:130
12. Such happiness protects from areas of disillusion in life. When you are young, it is called getting burned; when you are old, this is called being burned. Everyone has a certain amount of naivety into the Christian way of life. Bob heard that “If you are going with an unbelieving boy or girl, you are out of line.” And there were lurid examples given and the principle is true. You are better off with the ugliest Christian woman as opposed to the prettiest unbeliever. Bob was dating several beauty queens and a dancer at that time. He dropped them all like a hot rock. He went to each one and said, “Would you accept Christ as Savior?” Then Bob figured that if he married any Christian girl, he could be happy. It is easy to become disillusioned. You start out with some naive ideas and then reality slugs you. Everyone has the traumatic experience of being disillusioned. The nicest and the worst people in life are believers. Unbelievers are somewhere in between.
 - a. Philip. 1:10 circumstances
 - b. Details of life Heb. 4:5–6
 - c. You find a pedestal much faster than you find doctrine and an edification complex and you put some Christian on this pedestal. No one told you to put your faith in people. God does not give you the right to be disillusioned with believers. Mental attitude dynamics colors to match the Minnesota Vikings, apparently because Bob thought they would go all the way. How to enjoy money and details of life although Christian.
13. Inner happiness enhances the ability to love in all 3 categories. You cannot have inner happiness constantly and consistency without recognizing that it comes from God. Even if you do not have the doctrine of the mechanics, but you have some clue that God did it. Maybe a verse or two got thrown at you. You become aware that God gave you something which is unique. People have the habit of enjoying supreme happiness and then the roof falls in or the carpet is pulled out from under you. All of a sudden, you get a little nervous about it. However, you can learn to have confidence in your life even with happiness.
14. Ultimately, all happiness for the believer is related to Bible doctrine. Jer. 15:16 John 13:17 1John 1:4 therefore, the importance of the daily function of gap.
15. The edification complex fulfills and stabilizes inner happiness.
16. Inner happiness is commanded. You cannot work this out on your own. Philip. 4:4

that completes the Ecclesiastes view. Happiness can bring you misery. With scar tissue of the soul, everything that you touch can bring you misery. You can have all the details of life and compound your unhappiness.

Suffering

1. Causes: loss of health, administration of law enforcement; people (gossip, war, violence, ostracism); privation; social misery (loneliness, boredom).
2. The unique cause and under the general causes of suffering, Bob wants to quote from Sandler "Sandler on the Origins." This is an unbeliever's viewpoint. It has only been in the last two centuries that people have claimed the privilege of being individuals. False statement, but it helps him to build up his concept. Formerly, they were slaves, artisan, workers, but not a person. This has introduced new kinds of grief and misery and on the broadest scale, it has not been altogether a success. His error in his thinking here is that, this is not new. The slave is free; the peasant is recognized as being a human being. This stuff is as old as history. What appals him: hearts which get no real wage, souls which find no nourishment, falsehoods unlimited, desire unlimited, possibility unlimited; impossible demands upon complex realities unlimited. The ideas of the uniqueness of the soul. Dear God, with hair, with clothes, with drugs, with round trips through evil monstrosity, how terrified the soul must be in this vehemence. What he is saying in effect is, loss of value in life, which is general to believers and unbelievers alike. Disorientation with reality. All people are not equal and under no circumstances. When a state tries to legislate equality, there is a mass disorientation. Some people are miserable with college. Education does not make people equal and educated ignorance is one of the most disgusting things in the world. There is no equality in life. Here are the downtrodden masses, let's give them everything. You end up with a generation from childhood on, they know nothing but unreality, and they think nothing of taking drugs. 70–90% of young kids are involved in some way with drugs. The degeneracy of our music. For 2000 years the Africans have played the same pieces. The idea of a lot of drums and two pieces of spaghetti wiggling to music and calling it dancing. Bob shows what real dancing is like. Suffering generally in life; our country is suffering from lack of reality; lack of reality in our foreign policy. You cannot buy friends with money or having an unreal military policy. You take all your weapons over there, and wipe them out. If you bomb them and then find someone not too burned to sign a surrender. We have a generation going into the military who know no reality. They call their parents materialistic and they give their kids everything, and they call the parents materialistic. A kid involved in taking drugs was ostracized by his own peers in Thieme's day. Beverly Hills police force would pick these guys up in a moment. Now, everyone is on a trip. When you build unreality on unreality, it takes a national disaster to wake them up from the sleep of unreality. At least 3 kinds of national disasters: an all out war, economic disaster (which unreality generations build), divine judgment with the 4th or 5th cycle, but it may be expressed with the other two things.
3. There are categories of suffering:

- a. Unbelievers suffering: natural laws, divine laws, self-induced suffering. They violate divine laws, natural laws and human laws.
 - b. Unbeliever will suffer in eternity in the Lake of Fire. The believer will not suffer in eternity.
4. The premise: God's plan in suffering:
- a. All suffering for the believer is designed for blessing. All phase II suffering is designed by God for blessing. 1Peter 4:
 - b. The exception: divine discipline Heb. 12:6
 - c. The exception is removed by the rebound technique. Jesus Christ is eternal life and we share His life; He has a destiny and we share His destiny. We are in this top circle and we never get out. When we sin, we are out of fellowship. Rebound. Rebound covered. *ὁμολογέω* = *to cite a case; to name a point of law*. David committed sins where others were involved, but he also confessed, "Against You and You only have I sinned." When you cite your sins, you are back in fellowship again. 1Cor. 11:31 is identical; judging oneself. The judging of yourself, means you will not be judged. Rebound removes the exception.
 - d. Once you are back in fellowship, cursing is turned to blessing and this is where Rom. 8:28 comes into the picture. Suffering can be removed entirely; the suffering can be reduced; the suffering can continue at the same amount; and in all cases, this occurs still for blessing. It is inevitable in a basic course that people will come into the basic class discouraged. As long as you are alive, you are still in full-time Christian service. If God does not want you to serve, He will remove you from this world. Great believers have fallen back, but they rebound and they come back.
5. Believers suffer this will be covered later in point 4.

Lesson #43

Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Tim. 1:5

circa 1/30/70

We are now down to the reasons for Christian suffering. With scar tissue on the soul, everything that you touch turns to misery. Things designed for happiness result in unhappiness. Failure to get the RM or the RW.

2nd category of suffering, not taught in a basic series before: Suffering from the suppression of the subconscious and a guilt-complex. This is a problem for believers and unbelievers alike. There are many passages which deal with the good conscience, the pure conscience, etc. We must keep in mind gap and ice. Once doctrine enters into the mind, the filling of the Holy Spirit is necessary, which gives concentration and comprehension. If the Bible doctrine presented is advanced, then it takes frame of reference. However, we get to a point where we understand what is being taught. Γνώσις is one of those stages. Subjectivity always wants to help; it wants to do something. The Biblical concept is, you name your sin and you are forgiven, just as much as some breast-beater down the street saying, *woe is me, I am undone*. The filling of the Spirit is a grace principle and the comprehension of doctrine is also a matter of grace. You may have a problem with the

communicator, his language, his examples; and you might have someone in the congregation whom you do not care for, and that puts you off. However, these things aside, you have a way to respond to the doctrine, if you are filled with the Spirit. Faith will transfer the doctrine from the mind into the spirit, where it becomes ἐπίγνωσις. “Suppose I believe something which is false?” The human spirit rejects anything which is false; it will boomerang back into the mind. Only true doctrine is stored categorically in the soul. Stage 1 is communication; stage 2 is comprehension, stage 3 is positive volition toward Bible doctrine, causing it to be transferred by faith into the human spirit. .

The cycling of doctrine back into the mind as the frame of reference. A phrase used to describe this: συνηδῆσις = *with to think; doctrine about to be used*. When you cycle the doctrine through the mind, that means it is with something. Norms and standards and divine viewpoint thinking. This is a part of bringing every thought into captivity for Christ. Καθαρός [pure] and αγαθός [good]. These are words applied to the conscience.

There is no application from γνώσις. Only ἐπίγνωσις. When this doctrine becomes συνηδῆσις, then it can be applied and used. The renewing of our mind so that we can prove what the will of God is. The mind is the place for the worst category of all sins. Mental attitude sins produce suffering and self-induced misery. Mental attitude sins not only motivate but they also cause neurotic and psychotic conditions. They cause mental illnesses. The conscience of the soul with its old norms and standards. There is a pipe running from the old conscience of the soul. One thing which a person does is, suppress things which are distasteful. Guilt activity is one example of this. If you commit a sin which violates your own norms and standards, that can cause you some problems. There is a sin committed in the life and it causes guilt, which is a reaction to sin. When you think about that sin, you push into your subconscious, and you get into your norms and standards and they condemn you. Psychological adjustment is a failure to meet the problems of such things as a guilty conscience. The mind sets it aside, the norms and standards reject it, and it is set aside for a time of disaster. In the mind, we remember the sin that we associate with this suffering, and we compound the suffering, and this is where some believers get weird. We will deal with these sins coming up. It can be anything which violates your norms and standards. It gets stuck right there.

A second principle is psychological adjustment to life, which is taking sins which cause guilt. Psychology deals with this. Guilt; the pipe and the hatch. It comes to the human conscience, and the human conscience and rejects it. How do people stuff such a sin into the subconsciousness? 1. Rationalization; you justify something which causes your conscience to vibrate. When you destroy any part of your conscience, you are destroying your own orientation to life. People who do this take whatever is problematic in the mind and they push it into the sack. It destroys the norms and standards which exist. This is why a believer and unbeliever and operate on good norms and standards and come back from something, war, college, travels, and they are different people. Whatever norms and standards were inculcated have been destroyed and the subconscious has reacted. 2. Direct attack; having a guilt reaction and throwing a tantrum or becoming angry. You come out of your tantrum and you may find that you have forgotten all about it. 3. Defense mechanism, protects the mentality of the soul from whatever is too great for it. You blame

someone else. Operation patsy. 4. Denial you ignore the whole thing and let it go away. 5. Sublimation, which adjustment just finds a new outlet to drown out the violation of the norms and standards. Excessive alcohol, drugs, sex. The effects become great and it just drops back into the slot. These are psychological adjustments.

No matter how you get your sins down into the subconscious, the most common is a disaster type suffering. You associate your sin with whatever suffering is in your life. The is an indirect type of sinning which also carries with it some suffering. All of the fear not type passages (fear and worry) open the hatch. You can go to sleep, be worried about something, and a part of this is insecurity and when you go to sleep, you will dream, and it will bring out whatever causes all of this. This is simply the subconscious working into the conscious mind. Suffering is caused by the subconscious. This is caused by mental attitude sins.

Guilt should not be a part of your life. However, for a baby Christian, this is not enough. They can rebound, but they go by the way that they feel.

Solution

1. Continuous listening to Bible doctrine.
2. Doctrine must be comprehended.
3. Positive volition toward the doctrine will cycle it down to where it has application.
4. The doctrine cycled up through the human spirit is true doctrine and perceived by grace. All the doctrines in your mind are associated with grace.

The function of the frame of reference. A pure conscience means you keep short accounts and being filled with the Spirit, which demands purity. Believers suffer because of the subconscious thing with sin.

1Tim. 1:5–6 **The good aimed at** [this refers to God's provision for our guilt-reaction and guilt complex] **is love** [mental attitude love; ἀγαπή love; and here, this is the principle of ἀγαπή love here; this is simply an relaxed mental attitude, without any mental attitude sins] **that issues from a pure heart and a good conscience and a sincere faith. Certain persons, by swerving from these, have wandered away into vain discussion,**

God has decreed that all believers be happy and that all believers have a relaxed mental attitude; and this depends upon certain functions related to gap. Perfect orientation to all circumstances of life. God has decreed that we be free of mental attitude sins. God intends faith rest us to have a relaxed mental attitude. We cannot be bitter, vindictive, guilty, implacable, fear/worry, insecurity; and have a relaxed mental attitude at the same time. Mental attitude sins produce intensive soul suffering. Most of our overt and verbal sins come from a mental attitude sins. What we really are is what we think. Bring every thought into captivity for Christ. A double-minded man is unstable in all of his ways. Mental attitude sins and doctrine at the same time. Everywhere we turn, the worst sins are mental attitude sins. It is a major cause of suffering. The filling of the Spirit produces a relaxed mental attitude. When you are filled with the Spirit, you cannot sin. 1John 3:9.

If there is some reason you are implacable, vindictive, etc. the decree of God keeps on being ἀγαπή. You can only have ἀγαπή when you have a pure heart. You can only have a pure heart when your mental attitude sins are all gone. The fruit of the Spirit is a relaxed mental attitude. It is a part of the edification complex.

Now, we are dealing with the mind. Let's say you just wiped out operation pure heart. Over here is where your pure heart is. Once you have this soul, and if you have a high spiritual IQ and maximum eidêsis, you have a stabilizer. Let's say you commit a mental attitude sins, and then you compound this with a sin of the tongue or something else. What are you going to do? Fall apart? Go out and get drunk? So you failed; so what? You do not stand around and get feeling bad; and you don't do penance, you don't go whining to some church. We all have our critics; and some people may remind you. You forgive as Christ forgave. If they keep nagging you and harping on it, you are entitled to have a relaxed mental attitude, low opinion of them.

Operation pure heart comes and goes; once you have Bible doctrine stashed away as a frame of reference, that frame of reference stays and stays. Two lobes in the mind. Psychology has the inhibitor, etc. ἀγαθος συνηδηςις = *good conscience*. There is the *heart* side and the *conscience* side. For however long you stay in fellowship, you are pure of heart. Once you are out of fellowship, then you lose it. When one lobe goes out, the other keeps functioning. It also functions with respect to the subconscious. [The good aimed at keeps on being love our from the heart and from the conscience and faith unfeigned](#), which is faith in the doctrine which you hear. Αὐτοκριτος = *not an actor; without hypocrisy, to be objective with listening to the Word*. You are not hung up on the delivery of the pastor. You are not hung up on anything. You are totally objective in the listening of anything. Bob learned a trick in the service. Bob had trouble with one guy, so he walked in and slapped him. He didn't get mad, and Bob slapped him again; and he finally got him raving. To straighten out a problem-maker, you get them mad, and then fight them. Making someone mad, it is easy. You can rub the sweetest person in the world the wrong way. You can make anyone in the world mad. Some communicators you will like immediately and some you won't at all. No matter what, focus on the message. You must have a pure heart. Gap can only function when you are in fellowship. You cannot transfer something when you are mad, guilty, upset, etc. The malfunction for those who are more or less regular usually occurs at stage 3, and if you do not do that, then your good conscious never forms. A pure heart cannot be maintained if there is no conscience and no frame of reference; but if that is all you have, then you go in and out of fellowship. A pure heart is not good without a conscience. We can't handle a pure heart; we cannot handle mental attitude sins. Two words for swerving. Αστοκew = *to swerve, to deviate from the true target*. The other is εκτρεπω = *when you swerve away, you pick a form of sublimation*. When you have a malfunction, stage 3, it is called swerving. It takes two verbs to show this. *To turn aside* means to have a dislocated limb, so that you cannot walk. It refers to a malfunction of gap. Vain jangling is talking about scar tissue. Ματαιολογος = *vacuum words*. You think with a vacuum type vocabulary. The intensity of the suffering of the soul. The mental attitude sins in the soul. You express the human viewpoint of life.

1Tim. 1:19–20: **holding faith and a good conscience. By rejecting this, some have made shipwreck of their faith, among whom are Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I have handed over to Satan that they may learn not to blaspheme.**

How do you have and hold faith? You must do it with a good conscience and a frame of reference. You transfer more doctrine down into the human spirit. Some people have put the good conscience away. Actually, they have thrust it away. Αποθew = *to thrust away, to repel*. Maybe this is why all of your suffering confuses you. You can thrust away doctrine by not listening at all in the first place. Or, the other is to not have faith in the doctrine. In any case, you thrust away doctrine. The good conscience is stage 4 of doctrine and faith is stage 3.

Αναγω = *to shatter one's life into pieces*. There are two believers who have done this. Hymenaeus and Alexander were turned over to Satan.

1Tim. 3:9: **They must hold the mystery of the faith with a clear conscience.** The emphasis is that gap is the solution and in this context, deacons must function under gap.

1Tim. 4:1–3: **Now the Spirit expressly says that in later times some will depart from the faith by devoting themselves to deceitful spirits and teachings of demons, through the insincerity of liars whose consciences are seared, who forbid marriage and require abstinence from foods that God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth.**

Some of those who depart is αφιστιμι = *to stand away from, to desert, to run away, to depart*. It expresses negative volition in any stage of gap. Giving heed, which is prosechō. They pay attention to demon-possessed false teachers. They have a pleasing personality and they can deliver the message well. These are pleasing, excellent, highly regarded personalities. The message is the doctrine of demons. Speaking lies in hypocrisy. Their conscience is seared, the verb being κατεριαζω = *to be branded with a hot iron so that something is burned away*. Perfect passive indicative. Doctrine is rejected, so you then build scar tissue on the left bank. The human spirit is empty. The mataiotēs opens up and sucks in false standards and concepts and they burn away. This type of person is carried away by a demon-possessed unbeliever. This person cannot be distinguished from an unbeliever. He is born again and a child of God, and you could grill this person and you would never know that they are a believer. There is a break down. Scar tissue has taken the place of it. As mataiotēs opens up, the doctrine of demons is sucked in. The conscience is burned out and prevents one from developing any sort of growth.

Titus 1:15: **To the pure, all things are pure, but to the defiled and unbelieving, nothing is pure; but both their minds and their consciences are defiled.**

That is exactly what I said; I am glad that you did not miss it. They are very eloquent and persuasive; they are very personable. They are the nicest person in the world. His norms and standards from childhood is even changed. We have a whole class of kids who are taking drugs. Nixon wants to lower to voting age to 18 and teens who are irresponsible.

Even the human conscience is wiped out. Those involved in drug addiction; when you have this radical change, this affects the human conscience. The person cranking out the false information is the demon-possessed teacher. Bob keeps taking a bunch of questions. There comes a point of no return, although there are at least 2 exceptions.

Under the pure, all things are pure. This means, when you are filled with the Spirit, you can only recognize and accept that which is compatible with His character. That is the heart side. Pure heart on one side and a good conscience on the other. That which you accept under those conditions is pure; which refers to pure doctrine. To those who are defiled and unbelieving, they have negative volition and doctrine and truth are cut off from them. Stage 2 and 3 probably? Even their mind and conscience are defiled; both lobes.

Lesson #44 Suffering Basic Bible Doctrine Eph. 4:17 circa 2/6/70

If Bob wanted to make a minister miserable, he would make them listen to another minister. You can yield from now until doomsday and yieldedness does not mean a thing. Bob went around to a bunch of pastors after being saved, and asked about, *what do you do after being saved?* He was told, "Yield, brother, yield." It did not work.

The primary cause for adverse Christian suffering is scar tissue on the soul. This is almost a system of chain suffering. The volition of the individual believer makes him miserable; the principle of the vacuum of the soul.

Λεγω has a lot of meanings, but the idea is, information is being conveyed. Like it or not, you must think with words. Vocabulary is necessary for thought. Paul will explain something with words. The words found in this passage are important and vital to your Christian life. It is imperative that we understand the words of this particular passage. These are words of maximum impact and import. Μαρτυρομαι = *to testify*. Beware of misusing the Greek. This does not mean *to be a martyr*. The meanings of words are determined by their usage. There is a mental attitude here, not an emotion. The reason people get into this thing is quite simple. People get a D- in Greek; D for donation and minus, it should have been taken away.

A solemn warning and a declaration. Μακητι = *no longer*. The believer through scar tissue is walking as an unbeliever. The believer with scar tissue on the soul lives and thinks just like the unbeliever. The vacuum of the soul begins with the εν ματαιοτητος = *by means of emptiness, in the vacuum [of the soul]*. The soul is the image of God; self-consciousness; most of us know our own names and how to spell it. We have mentality. We have volition and emotion. We as individuals are sanctuaries; the building which we are in is not a sanctuary, but an auditorium. No stain glass windows and Bob is glad or he would through a brick through them. Windows are meant to see through. The disciples were some of the worst clucks in the world and He had to say that in the night in which He was betrayed before the cross. No stained glass in Berachah. Our stains are from good old Texas dust. Do not confuse emotion with the Christian way of life. All bonafide experience of the Church Age cannot be felt. No ecstasies based on the filling of the Spirit. There are ecstasies in this life, but it is not related to God the Holy Spirit. You can be depressed and

filled by the Spirit. When a believer goes on negative in his volition, he begins to build on the left bank of his soul, scar tissue. As he begins to build scar tissue, it opens up the vacuum of the soul. It is called ματαιοτης. Darkness (σκοτια) is pulled through the pipe. This is darkness as it enters the soul and it produces subjectivity. Then you have trouble on the right bank. Scar tissue is built on the right bank on mental attitude sins, adultery. When you begin to build up scar tissue on the right bank of the soul through these sins, you develop black out of the soul, and you become psychotic and neurotic. The sin unto death means that these apertures are completely filled up.

Eph 4:17 **Now this I say and testify in the Lord, that you must no longer walk as the Gentiles do, in the futility [ματαιοτης = vacuum] of their minds [vous].**

Ministers get sucked into various social movements and they allow for people to break the law in order to get their way. This is the vacuum of their soul.

Negative volition toward doctrine

1. Doctrine may not be interesting enough. Apathy.
2. Too busy for doctrine. No matter what it takes, Bible doctrine should be the most important thing in your life.
3. Antagonism or personality hangups toward the pastor. One guy Bob knew had a problem because he wanted everyone to love him. We are to listen to the content of the message. You may hate that he has a sing song voice, wears a black tie, does not illustrate like you want. Gap is not fed by personality. Dr. Chafer used to say, "God uses all kinds of personalities." Nevertheless, people turn on others for their personalities.
4. Antagonism or mental attitude sins toward others in the congregation. You cannot sit in church and be angry, implacable, jealous etc. toward another believer in the auditorious.
5. Not using rebound regularly.
6. Slavery to the details of life. It is more important to you to do this or that than to go to Bible class. No pro-football when Bible class is on; Bob saw to that. Now and again, there is a good time old western, where the hero kisses the horse.
- 7.
8. Getting with nice friends who want to have a social life instead of Bible class.

Eph 4:18 **Having become darkened [σκοτιζο = being darkened. Perfect passive participle] in their understanding [διανοια = result cosmic thinking, human viewpoint], alienated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them, due to their hardness of heart.**

Cosmic thinking by Dr. Chafer in the angelic conflict book or something like that. He had the only idea as to how to properly run a seminary. 4 years of Greek and Hebrew and categorical teaching. Throw out pastoral theology and hermeneutics. If you ever see Bob kneeling down and praying at the side of various people, call the white wagons.

Blackout of the Soul

1. Negative volition doctrine builds scar tissue on the soul and causes a breakdown of gap. There is no frame of reference, no exhale, no edification complex; and the deficiency of the soul continues. This is a retrogressing believer.
2. Failure of the function of gap causes false standards, false criteria, false doctrine and false function, etc. You turn into a phoney.
3. The believer lives and operates in the darkness of his soul. Results in subjectivity which is called in Scripture soul-fainting, frustration and unhappiness.
4. The frustration from darkness of soul cause you to be trapped in a frantic search for happiness.
5. This intensifies isolation from Bible doctrine. This is a believer in the state of apostasy.
6. As scar tissue continues to accumulate on both banks off the soul, psychoses and neuroses being to develop.
7. This is accompanied by pseudo lover in all 3 categories. Sincerity is not really being yourself.
8. This is often accompanied by self righteous and some form of pseudo-spirituality.
9. The believer becomes a casualty in the intensified stage of the angelic conflict.
10. The build up of scar tissue on the soul will result in the sin unto death.

Απαλλοτριω = *to be alienated from the ultimate source [of God]*. expressed here as the life of God. Passive voice, so it is having received alienation.

Eph 4:18b ...alienated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them, due to their hardness of heart.

Grace is the life of God. Bob has only seen one man whose orientation to the grace of God was fantastic. He did things that made others do flip flops. Bob got a 100 on a spiritual life exam. The guy next to him got a hundred, who did not know straight up from straight down. So Bob figured that he needed to straighten out Dr. Chafer. "What was the most important thing that you learned from this class?" "Grace." "Go back and look at all of those grades."

Some get tapes in dribbles. You may never give a dime. People sit down on their haunches and are concerned that someone got a 105 tapes this month; but that can't be the criterion for tapes and pubs. If you paid money for things and did not, it was noted; and that is going to be ended. T&P needs to be a grace operation or else. People must work at T&P; salaries must be paid; it cannot survive off of volunteers. If there is no money, then it closes down. Bob did not like it in the first place. If God is not in it, then we have all had it. There are rules and regulations which were compatible with good business procedure, but not with grace. We are running a business for God and not for profit. God's name is grace. Bob would rather close the doors of Berachah than ask for a dime. He has turned down checks as large as \$10,000. It is grace or it is not. Bob believes in exploiting grace to the maximum. That leaves it in God's hands. It is a principle of grace. There will

be no attempt to make money. If God is in it, then it will function; and if not, it ought to be shut down. Grace needs to be the issue. Bob takes the blame for any past policies since he was not paying close enough attention. It will be grace all the way. That is an application of the principle. We cannot afford to be alienated from the life of grace. We cannot afford to miss grace for 5 seconds.

The greatest virtue in the Christian life is knowledge of doctrine, whether you like it or not. Through ignorance, which means because of ignorance. If you are negative toward doctrine, you build up scar tissue and the vacuum opens up and sucks in darkness, and eventually your soul is darkened.

Ignorance is inside of them. Ignorance inside means legalism on the outside.

Eph 4:19 **They have become callous [πληροσις = scar tissue] and have given themselves up to sensuality, greedy to practice every kind of impurity.**

The idea is to learn the principle of suffering here. Perfect active participle απηλγεω = *to cease to feel from the ultimate source; to become calloused, to have scar tissue on the soul*. Specifically, this scar tissue on the left bank of the soul. There are two betrayals on the right bank as you build up scar tissue on the left bank. Going to fast for you pastors and too slow for the congregation. So, this must be a pastor's conference. Negative volition toward doctrine results in scar tissue on the left bank, which is relationship with God. Ματαιιοτης is opened up. That is subjectivity. There are two categories of sin which build up scar tissue on the right bank: promiscuity and mental attitude sins. Scar tissue on the right bank due to certain categories of sins and you betray yourself. Παραδιδιμε = *to betray*. They betray themselves to lasciviousness. Ασαλγηα = *promiscuity*. Sexual activity.

Maybe you have gone for some of the new morality, which is a part of the Communist conspiracy to overthrow our country.

Doctrine of Adultery

Ασαλγηα = *adultery*. It is good you found some paper finally to write on.

1. Adultery is prohibited by the Word of God. Ex. 20:14 this has nothing to do with not having fun.
2. Mental adultery condemned also in Matt. 5 think it means you do it.
3. Adultery causes scar tissue of the soul. Prov. 6:32 and Eph. 4:17–20 Prov. 6:32–34: **He who commits adultery lacks sense; he who does it destroys himself. Wounds and dishonor will he get, and his disgrace will not be wiped away. For jealousy makes a man furious, and he will not spare when he takes revenge.** There is a RM for a RW. A Christian woman and her soul is laid out. God has designed a RM for a RW. Before the sex love can be what it was designed to be from God, there must first be a coalescence of the souls. The man must have aggressiveness toward the woman and he must fill up her soul. Her mentality begins to think of him. In emotion, she has rapport with him. This is a part of divine

design. Scar tissue on these apertures means that the RM can never fill the soul of the RW. It is important to avoid promiscuity. Somewhere, there is a RW for every RM; and it is worth waiting for and more important than anything in the world. It is magnificent. The scar tissue on the soul from adultery will destroy the glory of that relationship.

4. The frustration and punishment for adultery is *πληνεζια* = *frantic search for happiness*. Eph. 4:19 5:3 and it means to hit the panic button and to go after promiscuous activity of all kinds. It affects the soul and the body. 1Cor. 6:13–18 it leads to the inability to be aggressive in the male; it destroys the erogenous design of the female, ranging from frigidity or nymphomania. This destroys the very design of the RM/RW. When a Christian young man dates a young woman, you are probably, as a teen, dating someone else's right woman. Protect her soul and body. Teens don't have enough discernment to come out of the rain when it comes to the opposite sex. Bob never performs a teen marriage. A woman going out with a guy must assume that he is not her RM. She too has a RM and she is waiting for him. Anyone can get up and scream in 5 different octaves not to commit adultery. Scare tactics get you nowhere. Someone might behave for a week. You need to straighten out your young people. This is what every evangelist uses on young people's night.
5. Adultery is a bonafide basis for divorce. Luke 16:18 scar tissue destroys compatibility of the souls in mental and physical areas.
6. Adultery and fornication are used to describe apostasy. Ezek. 16 23 Rev. 17
7. Marriage is the sanctification of category #2 love.
8. The glory of category 2 love in Eph. 5 and 1Cor. 11. Long hair on a woman and short on a man; just play poker. As long as your hair is long than your man's, then that is long enough. If he is bald, you have got it made. This is a sign of the woman's submission to her RM. There is a glory which comes from her; the woman is the glory of the man. Jesus Christ had short hair. He did not look like a hippy or a gypsy or a barbarian.
9. Application of category 2 love to the single person
 - a. The RM and the RW were designed by God in eternity past. Therefore, there exists for you an opposite number of divine design. It is always the opposite sex.
 - b. The exception is the rare case of celibacy or supreme sacrifice. 1Cor. 9:5 refers to this as a gift of Paul. I can lead around a wife too. The word is *to lead around a cow*; Bob is not going to explain the significance of that.
 - c. Every believer will meet his opposite number. God will bring this person to us in the right time. We don't have to run around and look. You don't have to set up a system of interrogation. That is unnecessary. You don't invite the boy in to see your hope chest after the first date. If you go to a Christian school, someone will walk up to you and say, "The Lord has led me to marry you."
 - d. There is no benefit in meeting your opposite number unless you have waited on the Lord. Edification complex and cycling of doctrine. Life and conduct

must be based on there being a RM/RW. Recognize that there is an opposite number. It is not a case of cheap substitutes and no substitutes. Wait for the RM or the RW; it is worth it.

- e. Fornication or adultery is accepting a cheap substitute to gratify a physical or a biological or emotional urge.
- f. Flee fornication.
- g. Fornication builds up scar tissue on the soul; scar tissue destroys any benefit from meeting the RW or the RM. It is prohibited because God wants us to have the greatest happiness. Eccles. 9:9 the greatest happiness for an unbeliever can be in marriage. It is possible for an unbeliever to have happiness that we will never know. The unbeliever can have the RM/RW relationship, as it is for all members of the human race. Buddy Dano's idea, what happens is, a man becomes a believer and becomes very legalistic and finds a believer woman who is very legalistic; and they merge and are very legalistic; then he becomes grace oriented, and then he finds out that life can be quite difficult. Both parties need to be grace oriented.
- h. Maximum benefit from category 2 love is the edification complex of the soul and this is why there are so many teens in Berachah. They want to be prepared with the edification complex of the soul and it comes from daily intake of doctrine. You cannot build up an edification complex from once a week. About 1000 show up once a week at the 2nd service and Bob tells them they are going nowhere in a hurry. Bob teaches, Monday morning, Tues-Fri night; thrice on Sunday. If young people are going to enjoy the sex relationship designed by God, they must be prepared when it happens.
- i. The framework for this expression of love is marriage. Everyone should marry the RM and the RW. It does not occur as often as it should. The greatest expression for this love comes from the edification complex.

Εργασία = *to make a business or a profession or something*. The woman gets into adultery or promiscuity. She becomes miserable from this. She tries to prove something. So she gets into nymphomania or some form of frigidity or she gets into some form of lesbianism or auto-erotism. She blows out this wonderful relationship. We handle these things in this church in plain simple language. I am restraining myself with regards to language tonight because you pastors are all here.

Eph 4:19b ...and have given themselves up to sensuality, greedy to practice every kind of impurity.

If sex doesn't work, then they try to sublimate with a similar stimulus.

This I explain and give a solemn warning that you no longer walk like the gentiles by means of the vacuum of their minds. Their mind having become darkened in the sphere of thinking, having become alienated from the life from the source of God because of the ignorance that is in them because of the scar tissue of their heart; having become callous,

have betrayed themselves over to promiscuity, and have become involved in a frantic search for happiness. (Eph. 4:17–19).

Lesson #45 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Tim. 1:7 circa 2/13/70

Lesson #46 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Tim. 1:7 circa 2/20/70

Lesson #47 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Tim. 1:7 circa 2/27/70

Lesson #48 Exegesis Basic Bible Doctrine 1Tim. 1:7 circa 3/6/70